### VERTEBRATE PREFERENTIAL INTRACELLULAR PH REGULATION DURING SEVERE ACUTE HYPERCARBIA

by

Ryan Brady Shartau

B.Sc., The University of Calgary, 2006 M.Sc., The University of Calgary, 2009

### A THESIS SUBMITTED IN PARTIAL FULFILLMENT OF THE REQUIREMENTS FOR THE DEGREE OF

#### DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

in

### THE FACULTY OF GRADUATE AND POSTDOCTORAL STUDIES (Zoology)

# THE UNIVERSITY OF BRITISH COLUMBIA (Vancouver)

December, 2017

© Ryan Brady Shartau, 2017

#### Abstract

Environmental CO<sub>2</sub> tensions reach >8 kPa (*ca.* 79,000 µatm; hypercarbia) in some habitats and create severe acid-base challenges for vertebrates. Typically, during a hypercarbicinduced respiratory acidosis, changes in blood pH are compensated for, which returns pH to its normal value, and this is coupled to tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) regulation. However, during acute environmental CO<sub>2</sub> exposure, this process may be limited to <2 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>. Some fishes fully protect tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) (preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation) despite large sustained reductions of pH<sub>e</sub> (>1 pH unit) and can tolerate *P*CO<sub>2</sub> >3 kPa. I hypothesized that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is used by adult fishes and embryonic amniotes during severe acute acid-base disturbances. This was investigated by examining (1) whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a general response to various types of acid-base disturbances, (2) surveying fishes for the presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, and (3) whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is used during development in reptiles.

Using white sturgeon, I found that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is not a general response to both respiratory and metabolic acidoses. Despite a robust capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during respiratory acidoses, not all tissues were protected during metabolic acidoses to the same degree. Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was observed to be a common pattern of acid-base regulation amongst fishes in response to severe acute hypercarbia. A total of 20 species, ranging from basal ("primitive") to derived, were examined and 18 were observed to use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Finally, developing amniotes (snapping turtle and American alligator) used preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during severe acute respiratory acidosis, but the capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was progressively reduced throughout development.

This thesis demonstrates that preferential  $pH_i$  regulation is likely a common strategy of acid-base regulation occurring in response to severe acute hypercarbia in adult fishes and possibly amniotes. I propose that preferential  $pH_i$  regulation is an embryonic vertebrate strategy, that has been retained or lost in adults depending on the environmental acid-base challenges they face.

### Lay Summary

Acid-base homeostasis in vertebrates can be disrupted by high environmental CO<sub>2</sub> (hypercarbia), which creates severe acid-base disturbances. Some vertebrates are exceptionally hypercarbic, likely due to their ability to tightly protect tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) despite a reduction in extracellular pH (termed preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation). My thesis explores preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in vertebrates across phylogenies and during development in response to severe acute hypercarbia. A survey of 20 fish species showed that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is used by 18 of these species; it is also used during severe acute hypercarbia in reptilian embryos. These findings suggest preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a common vertebrate pattern of pH regulation, possibly arising in embryos and retained or lost in adult vertebrates depending on their environment; this may have been important for major evolutionary transition in vertebrates, including the evolution of air breathing and the transition from life in water to life on land.

#### Preface

A version of Chapter 2 has been published. Shartau, R. B., Baker, D. W., and Brauner, C. J. (2017). White sturgeon (*Acipenser transmontanus*) use different strategies for pH regulation depending on the type of acid-base disturbance. *Journal of Comparative Physiology B*. 187:985-994. I designed the experiments, collected and analyzed the data, and wrote the manuscript with assistance from Daniel Baker and under supervision from Colin Brauner.

Chapter 3 was a collaborative project with Baker, D. W., Harter, T. S., Aboagye, D. L., Allen, P. J., Val, A. L., Crossley II, D. A., Kohl, Z. F., Hedrick, M. S., and Brauner, C. J. Preferential intracellular pH regulation may contribute to fish diversity in severely hypercarbic habitats. I designed the experiments with input from Colin Brauner. I setup the experiments and collected the data with assistance from Daniel Baker, Till Harter, Daniel Aboagye, Peter Allen, Adalberto Val, Dane Crossley, Zachary Kohl and Michael Hedrick. I analyzed the data and wrote the manuscript under supervision from Colin Brauner.

A version of Chapter 4 has been published. Shartau, R. B., Crossley II, D. A., Kohl, Z. F., and Brauner, C. J. (2016). Embryonic common snapping turtles (*Chelydra serpentina*) preferentially regulate tissue pH during acid-base challenges. *Journal of Experimental Biology*. 219(13): 1994-2002. I designed the experiments along with Dane Crossley and Colin Brauner. I collected the data with assistance from Dane Crossley and Zachary Kohl. I analyzed the data and wrote the manuscript under supervision from Colin Brauner.

A version of Chapter 5 has been published. Shartau, R. B., Crossley II, D. A., Kohl, Z. F., Elsey, R. M., and Brauner, C. J. (In press). American alligator (*Alligator mississippiensis*) embryos tightly regulate intracellular pH during a severe acidosis. *Canadian Journal of Zoology*. I designed the experiments along with Dane Crossley and Colin Brauner. I collected the data with assistance from Dane Crossley and Zachary Kohl. Ruth Elsey supplied the animals. I analyzed the data and wrote the draft under supervision from Colin Brauner.

The experiments in the thesis followed protocols that were approved by the UBC animal care committee (animal care no: A11-0235).

## **Table of Contents**

Abstract		ii
Lay Sumn	nary	iii
Preface		iv
Table of C	Contents	vi
List of Tal	bles	Х
List of Fig	gures	xi
List of Syı	mbols and Abbreviations	xiii
Glossary .		xiv
Acknowle	dgements	XV
Dedication	 n	xvi
Chapter 1	: General Introduction	1
1.1 Ac	id-base regulation in vertebrates	2
1.1.1	Extracellular compartment	
1.1.2	Intracellular compartment	6
1.1.3	In vivo studies of pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	6
1.1.4	In vitro pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	8
1.1.5	Cellular mechanisms of pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	9
1.1.6	$pH_{e} \mbox{ and } pH_{i} \mbox{ regulation beyond the bicarbonate concentration threshold}$	
1.2 Pre	ferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	
1.2.1	Mechanisms of preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	
1.3 Hy	percarbia and acid-base regulation – a role for preferential $pH_i$ regulation?	
1.4 Pre	ferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation: a basal euteleostom strategy or embryonic strategy?	15
1.5 The	esis objective and organization	17
1.5.1	Is preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation a general strategy of acid-base regulation in white s	turgeon
subjec	ted to a range of acid-base disturbances?	
1.5.2	Is preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation a common strategy of acid-base regulation among a	ı diverse
range	of fish species?	19
1.5.3	How does the strategy of acid-base regulation shift throughout development?	19
1.5.4	Is preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation an embryonic strategy in amniote embryos?	

Chap	ter 2	White Sturgeon (Acipenser transmontanus) Acid-Base Regulation Differs in	
Resp	onse t	to Different Types of Acidoses	27
2.1	Intr	oduction	27
2.2	Me	thods	29
2	2.2.1	Animal acquisition and holding	29
2	2.2.2	Experimental protocol	30
4	2.2.3	Respiratory acidosis	30
4	2.2.4	Metabolic acidosis	31
4	2.2.5	Blood sampling, tissue sampling and ions	31
4	2.2.6	Calculations and statistical analysis	32
2.3	Res	ults	33
4	2.3.1	Extracellular acid-base status	33
4	2.3.2	Intracellular acid-base status	33
4	2.3.3	Hematocrit, plasma [Cl <sup>-</sup> ] and [lactate]	34
2.4	Dis	cussion	34
2	2.4.1	White sturgeon preferentially regulate pH <sub>i</sub> during respiratory acidoses	34
2	2.4.2	Tissue pH <sub>i</sub> is differentially protected following metabolic acidoses	36
2	2.4.3	Preferential $pH_i$ regulation may be a general strategy of acid-base regulation in $A$ .	
t	transm	ontanus – but not all tissues are protected all the time	38
2	2.4.4	Conclusions	38
Chap	ter 3	: Preferential Intracellular pH Regulation May Represent a Common Strateg	gy of
Acid-	Base	Regulation Amongst CO <sub>2</sub> Tolerant Fishes	46
3.1	Intr	oduction	46
3.2	Me	thodology	49
	3.2.1	Animal acquisition and holding	49
	3.2.2	Series I: CO <sub>2</sub> tolerance assay	51
	3.2.3	Series II: Strategy of acid-base balance during severe acute hypercarbia	51
	3.2.4	Series III: CO <sub>2</sub> tolerance to infer pattern of pH regulation	53
	3.2.5	Calculations and statistical analysis	53
3.3	Res	ults	54
	3.3.1	Series I: Development of a CO <sub>2</sub> tolerance assay	54
	3.3.2	Series II: Survey of pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	54
	3.3.3	Series III: CO <sub>2</sub> tolerance	55
			vii

3.4	4 Dis	cussion	55
	3.4.1	Use of CO <sub>2</sub> assay for tolerance to acute hypercarbia	56
	3.4.2	Acid-base regulation during hypercarbia	57
	3.4.3	Preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation in fishes	58
	3.4.4	Preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation: a strategy for expansion into hypercarbic environments?	60
Cha	pter 4	: Embryonic Common Snapping Turtles ( <i>Chelydra serpentina</i> ) Preferentially	
Reg	ulate I	ntracellular Tissue pH during Acid-Base Challenges	71
4.	1 Inti	oduction	71
4.2	2 Me	thods	73
	4.2.1	Turtle embryo acquisition and incubation	73
	4.2.2	Experimental protocols	74
	4.2.3	Experimental treatments	76
	4.2.4	Blood sampling, animal euthanasia, tissue sampling and ions	77
	4.2.5	Calculations and statistical analyses	78
4.	3 Res	sults	79
	4.3.1	Series 1: Acid-base status during development in normocarbic normoxia following expo	sure
	to seve	ere acute hypercarbic hypoxia	79
	4.3.2	Series 2: Response to an acute respiratory acidosis or alkalosis at 90% of incubation in	
	embry	os reared under constant hypercarbia	80
4.4	4 Dis	cussion	81
	4.4.1	Capacity for preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation shifts during development	81
	4.4.2	Rearing condition alters blood and tissue acid-base status	82
	4.4.3	Acid-base regulation during development	83
	4.4.4	Conclusions and perspectives	85
Cha	pter 5	: American Alligator Embryos Tightly Regulate Intracellular pH During a	
Seve	ere Aci	idosis	95
5.	1 Inti	oduction	95
5.2	2 Me	thods	97
	5.2.1	Subjects of study	97
	5.2.2	Surgical procedures	97
	5.2.3	Experimental treatment and physiological measurements	98
	5.2.4	Calculations and statistical analyses	99
5.	3 Res	sults and discussion	. 100
			viii

Chapter (	6: General Discussion and Conclusions	106
6.1 Th	esis overview and major contributions	
6.2 Pr	eferential $pH_i$ regulation: A common and distinct pattern of acid-base regulation	
6.2.1	Inter- and intra-specific variation of preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	
6.3 Pr	eferential $pH_i$ regulation: A potential developmental and evolutionary strategy to cop	pe with
acute ac	id-base disturbances	
6.3.1	Preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation: An exaptation for vertebrate evolution?	
6.4 Fu	ture research directions	
6.4.1	Survey of fish species	
6.4.2	Acid-base regulation during development	
6.4.3	Chronic acid-base disturbances	
6.4.4	Role of the environment	
6.4.5	Mechanism(s) of preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	
6.5 Su	mmary and final thoughts	
Reference	es	127
Appendix	: A note on the methodology of pH measurements	146

## List of Tables

Table 3.1: Plasma Cl <sup>-</sup> and osmolarity, and hematocrit of fishes subjected to hypercarbia exposure 68
Table 3.2: CO <sub>2</sub> tolerance assay in various fish species. CO <sub>2</sub> tension was increased at a rate of 2 kPa per
hour, starting at normocarbia (~0.04 kPa PCO <sub>2</sub> ) until fish reached loss of equilibrium (LOE) 69
Table 4.1: Plasma ion concentrations at 90% of incubation in <i>Chelydra serpentina</i> embryos reared in NC
and HC3.5
Table 6.1: Fish species investigated in this dissertation. 125

## List of Figures

Figure 1.1: Representation of the typical response of vertebrates utilizing coupled pH regulation during
acute sustained hypercapnia
Figure 1.2: Representation of the typical response of vertebrates utilizing preferential intracellular pH
(pH <sub>i</sub> ) regulation during acute sustained hypercapnia
Figure 1.3: A theoretical representation of the typical extracellular pH (pH <sub>e</sub> ) response to short-term (<5
days) hypercarbia in fish
Figure 1.4: Phylogeny showing distribution of preferential intracellular pH (pH <sub>i</sub> ) regulation and coupled
pH regulation amongst vertebrates when exposed to acute >2 kPa $PCO_2$ prior to dissertation research 25
Figure 2.1: Effect of a hyperoxia-induced respiratory acidosis in Acipenser transmontanus white sturgeon
on blood acid-base status
Figure 2.2: Effect of metabolic acidoses in Acipenser transmontanus (white sturgeon) on blood acid-base
status
Figure 2.3: Effect of a hyperoxia-induced respiratory acidosis in Acipenser transmontanus (white
sturgeon) on intracellular pH (pH <sub>i</sub> ) of red blood cells (RBC), heart, liver, brain and white muscle (WM).
Figure 2.4: Effect of metabolic acidoses in <i>Acipenser transmontanus</i> (white sturgeon) on intracellular pH
(pH <sub>i</sub> ) of red blood cells (RBC), heart, liver, brain and white muscle (WM)
Figure 2.5: Effect of a hypercarbic-induced respiratory acidosis in <i>Acipenser transmontanus</i> (white
sturgeon) on blood and tissue acid-base status following a 6 h exposure to 1.5 kPa <i>P</i> CO <sub>2</sub>
Figure 3.1 Bar plot of CO <sub>2</sub> tensions at loss of equilibrium in <i>Oncorhynchus mykiss</i> and <i>Acipenser</i>
<i>transmontanus</i> when subjected to a progressive increase in $PCO_2$ at 1, 2 or 4 kPa h <sup>-1</sup>
Figure 3.2: Effect of 3 h exposure to elevated CO <sub>2</sub> on blood and tissue acid-base status in 10 different fish
species
Figure 3.3: Evolution of preferential $pH_i$ regulation and coupled $pH_e/pH_i$ regulation amongst adult fishes
exposed to an acute ( $<48$ h) respiratory acidosis of $>1$ kPa blood PCO <sub>2</sub>

Figure 4.3: Changes in blood and tissue acid-base status in common snapping turtles (*Chelydra serpentina*) embryos at 90% of incubation continuously reared in either normocarbia or hypercarbia..... 89

Figure 4.5: Effect of exposure to normocarbia in snapping turtle embryos (*Chelydra serpentina*) at 90% of incubation in Series 2 reared continuously and sampled in hypercarbia (3.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; HC3.5) or following 1 h exposure to normocarbia (0.03 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; NC) for either 3 or 24 h.

Figure 5.1: Effect of exposure to an acute respiratory acidosis in *Alligator mississippiensis* embryos on blood and tissue acid-base status. 104

Figure 5.2: Difference in blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) during development following a respiratory acidosis in embryonic *Alligator mississippiensis* (American alligator; 70% to hatch) and *Chelydra serpentina* (snapping turtle; 70 and 90% to hatch), and in post-hatch *C. serpentina*, *Chrysemys picta bellii* (western painted turtle), *Anolis equestris* (knight anole) and *Dipsosaurus dorsalis* (desert iguana). ..... 105

## List of Symbols and Abbreviations

βΝΗΕ	$\beta$ -adrenergic Na <sup>+</sup> /H <sup>+</sup> exchanger
AE	Anion exchanger
ENaC	Epithelial Na <sup>+</sup> channel
Hb	Hemoglobin
HC13	Hypercarbic hypoxia (13kPa PCO <sub>2</sub> , 9kPa PO <sub>2</sub> )
HC3.5	Hypercarbic (3.5kPa PCO <sub>2</sub> , 21kPa PO <sub>2</sub> ) condition
Het	Hematocrit
МСТ	Monocarboxylate transporter
kPa	kilo Pascal, a unit of pressure
mM	millimolar
MRC	Mitochondrion rich cell (ionocyte)
NBC	Na <sup>+</sup> /HCO <sub>3</sub> <sup>-</sup> co-transporter
NC	Normocarbic (0.03kPa PCO <sub>2</sub> , 21kPa PO <sub>2</sub> ) condition
NHE	Na <sup>+</sup> /H <sup>+</sup> exchanger
$PCO_2$	Partial pressure of CO <sub>2</sub>
рН	$-\log[H^+]$
pH <sub>e</sub>	Blood (extracellular) pH
$pH_i$	Tissue (intracellular) pH
pK'	Apparent negative log of dissociation constant (dependent on temperature and
	ionic strength)
$PO_2$	Partial pressure of O <sub>2</sub>
RBC	Red Blood Cell
s.e.m.	Standard error of the mean
VHA	V-type H <sup>+</sup> -ATPase

## Glossary

Coupled pH regulation	$pH_i$ changes in a qualitatively similar fashion as $pH_e$
Exaptation	An adaptation that has been co-opted for another, unrelated use
Hypercapnia	Elevated internal CO <sub>2</sub>
Hypercarbia	Elevated environmental CO <sub>2</sub>
Hypochloremia	Reduced level of chloride ions in the blood
Metabolic acidosis	Reduced pH because of a reduction in $HCO_3^-$ at a constant $PCO_2$
pH compensation	The process of pH recovery involving one or more mechanisms
pH recovery	A return of pH to its normal value following an acid-base
	disturbance
Preferential pH <sub>i</sub> regulation	$pH_i$ is regulated independently of $pH_e$
Respiratory acidosis	Reduced pH because of increased blood CO <sub>2</sub> from an
	environmental or internal source

#### Acknowledgements

The work undertaken in this thesis would not have been possible without the help, support and guidance of many people. Firstly, I want to thank my supervisor, Colin Brauner, for his excellent mentorship. He has provided the opportunities to pursue numerous interesting avenues of research, writing and travel throughout my degree that have been instrumental in shaping my growth as a scientist. I am also greatly appreciative of the guidance of my committee members, Bill Milsom, Jeff Richards, and Rick Taylor, who provided valuable insight and feedback on my work.

The various members of the Brauner lab made it a great place to be, both in the lab and during various adventures abroad. In particular, thanks to Dan Baker for showing me the ropes when I first started. Till Harter, Phil Morrison and Mike Sackville were often with me while traveling to exotic locales, conducting interesting research, or chatting about science and life, typically while enjoying a cold brew (or perhaps a warm one watered down with ice).

The Zoology Department is a fantastic place, and I had the pleasure of interacting with many members of its administrative staff, technicians and the numerous students, post-docs, and faculty. I was fortunate to start my time in the department with a great cohort of fellow graduate students, including Georgie Cox, Yvonne Dzal, Taylor Gibbons, and Gigi Lau.

Over the course of my degree, I have had the good fortune to collaborate with many individuals, which has greatly contributed to this dissertation. In particular, I would like to thank Dane Crossley at the University of North Texas, Peter Allen at Mississippi State University, and Adalberto Val at the National Institute for Amazonian Research (INPA).

Next, I want to thank my Mom and Dad. You were my first teachers, and you encouraged and supported me throughout all my years of education. As well, thanks to the rest of my family for your support and taking an interest in my work. And, to my four-legged buddy, Liam, who thinks thesis stuff is pointless and would rather chase squirrels, thanks for providing a useful and fun distraction.

Finally, Sabrina – my wife and best friend. Thank you for your support, patience and love over the years. You have played an important role over the course of this thesis and many of the ideas are influenced from discussions with you.

For Sabrina, thank you for your love and support.

### **Chapter 1: General Introduction**

The overall goal of my thesis was to examine the strategies of vertebrate acidbase regulation in response to severe acute acid-base disturbances, predominantly induced by exposure to elevated environmental  $CO_2$  (hypercarbia). Specifically, this thesis explores preferential intracellular pH regulation, a pattern of acid-base regulation that is markedly different from what has previously been considered the typical vertebrate pattern (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau et al., 2016a). Typically, vertebrates exposed to severe hypercarbia experience a large rapid reduction in both extracellular pH ( $pH_e$ ) and intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>), and compensation of pH<sub>i</sub> is dependent on partial compensation of  $pH_e$  (Fig. 1.1); this is referred to as coupled pH regulation (Shartau et al., 2016a). In contrast, a few vertebrates are able to preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> despite large uncompensated extracellular acidoses during exposure to severe hypercarbia (Fig. 1.2) (Shartau et al., 2016a), a phenomenon that is poorly understood and had only been observed in three fishes and one aquatic tetrapod prior to this dissertation. Using a diverse selection of species ranging from basal to derived fishes, and amniotes, this thesis explores preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in vertebrates across phylogenies and during ontogeny. My overall hypothesis for this thesis is that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a widely used strategy amongst vertebrates to maintain pH homeostasis during severe acute acid-base disturbances. Based on this hypothesis, it is predicted that preferential  $pH_i$ regulation will: (1) confer protection against different types of severe acute pH disturbances, (2) be a widely used pattern of pH regulation amongst vertebrates, and (3) confer  $pH_i$  protection in animals unable to acutely utilize coupled pH regulation.

This General Introduction will review what is presently known about acid-base regulation in vertebrates in relation to coupled pH regulation and preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. The challenges associated with acid-base regulation during hypercarbia will be explored, the putative origins of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation are discussed and finally, the objectives and organization of the subsequent data chapters are provided.

#### **1.1** Acid-base regulation in vertebrates

It is well known that absolute physiological pH values differ between species, differ between body compartments within species and are affected by temperature (Rahn, 1974); however, within a given system, pH values are regulated within a relatively narrow range (Cameron, 1989a; Heisler, 1984). Deviations from normal physiological pH values can affect molecular charge, altering the structure and function of proteins, lipids, carbohydrates and nucleic acids, and, ultimately, reducing whole-animal performance (e.g. reduce heart and skeletal muscle contractility, alter metabolic pathways, and disrupt cellular signalling and processes such as volume regulation) (Occhipinti and Boron, 2015; Putnam and Roos, 1997). The degree to which a pH change affects function depends on the system in question. Disturbances to acid-base homeostasis may arise from respiratory or metabolic sources.

Respiratory acidoses occur due to an increase in blood CO<sub>2</sub>, either from the environment (hypercarbia) or by retention of metabolically produced CO<sub>2</sub> (hypercapnia). Typical arterial *P*CO<sub>2</sub> values for adult water and bimodally breathing fishes, reptiles and mammals are 0.1–0.5 (Ultsch, 1996), 0.5–3.5 (Shartau and Brauner, 2014), 1.8–4.3 (Ultsch, 1996) and 4.5–5.6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> (Arieff et al., 1976; Malan et al., 1985; Wood and Schaefer, 1978; Yaksh and Anderson, 1987), respectively. Any increase in arterial *P*CO<sub>2</sub> beyond those values shifts the equilibrium of the CO<sub>2</sub> hydration reaction (CO<sub>2</sub> + H<sub>2</sub>O  $\Leftrightarrow$ H<sup>+</sup> + HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>), promoting the formation of H<sup>+</sup> and HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>, thus lowering pH and resulting in acidosis.

Metabolic acidoses occur due to the production of metabolically generated acid, which lowers  $HCO_3^-$  at relatively constant  $PCO_2$  (Occhipinti and Boron, 2015); often metabolic acidoses occur alongside respiratory acidoses (mixed acidosis) (Kieffer et al., 1994; Wang et al., 1994). In fishes, compensation of a metabolic acidosis is primarily dependent on net exchange of acid-base relevant ions at the gills (Evans et al., 2005; Hwang et al., 2011), and to a lesser degree, excretion of acidic equivalent in the form of titratable acidity and ammonium ions through renal pathways (Kwong et al., 2014).

During an acute respiratory acidosis, reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> are associated with qualitatively similar reductions in pH<sub>i</sub>. Following the onset of a respiratory acidosis, the

compensation of pH<sub>i</sub> is often more rapid than that of pH<sub>e</sub>, but complete correction of pH<sub>i</sub> generally requires pH<sub>e</sub> compensation of >50% (Shartau et al., 2016a). This is referred to as 'coupled pH regulation' whereby changes in pH<sub>i</sub> are coupled to changes in pH<sub>e</sub>. Vertebrates relying on pH<sub>e</sub> regulation are considered to use coupled pH regulation to maintain acid-base homeostasis during an acute persistent acidosis; this is the most widely observed response both *in vivo* and *in vitro* that had been observed prior to this thesis (Shartau et al., 2016a).

#### 1.1.1 Extracellular compartment

Acid-base disturbances in vertebrates can be minimized or compensated by either (i) direct transfer of acid-base relevant ions between the cell and blood, and/or the blood and the environment, (ii) buffering with bicarbonate and non-bicarbonate buffers, or (iii) altering ventilation rate to modify blood  $PCO_2$  and, thus, pH via the  $CO_2$ -HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> buffer system (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Evans et al., 2005; Heisler, 1984). The primary mechanism of short-term acid-base compensation in terrestrial air breathers consists of the latter because blood  $PCO_2$  is high relative to environmental levels (e.g. ~5 kPa vs. <0.1 kPa  $PCO_2$ , respectively), so considerable adjustment of pH<sub>e</sub> can be accomplished through changes in ventilation; thus the buffering power of the  $CO_2$ -HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> system is large in these animals (Occhipinti and Boron, 2015). In water breathers this mechanism is much less effective due to the low blood PCO<sub>2</sub> levels (~0.3-0.7 kPa vs. <0.1 kPa  $PCO_2$ , respectively) and similarity to environmental levels (Heisler, 1984). Thus, water breathing fishes rely on buffering to minimise acid-base changes, and direct transfer of acid-base relevant ions to compensate acid-base disturbances (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Perry and Gilmour, 2006).

Studies investigating compensation for an acute respiratory acidosis in fishes have been conducted on a relatively limited number of species including a few elasmobranchs [e.g. big skate *Raja ocellata* (Wood et al., 1990), dogfish *Scyliorhinus stellaris* (Heisler et al., 1988), starspotted dogfish *Mustelus manazo* (Hayashi et al., 2004)] or several teleosts [e.g. rainbow trout *Oncorhynchus mykiss* (Larsen and Jensen, 1997; Wood and LeMoigne, 1991), carp *Cyprinus carpio* (Claiborne and Heisler, 1984), European eel *Anguilla anguilla* (McKenzie et al., 2002), Conger eel *Conger conger* (Toews et al., 1983), brown bullhead *Ictalurus nebulosus* (Goss et al., 1992), Japanese founder Paralichthys olivaceus (Hayashi et al., 2004), and yellowtail Seriola quinqueradiata (Hayashi et al., 2004)]. In general, when these fishes experience an increase in blood PCO<sub>2</sub>, there is a corresponding rapid reduction in pH<sub>e</sub>, which is then compensated over the following 24-96 h. The degree of pH<sub>e</sub> reduction depends on the severity of acidosis and the buffer capacity of the blood. Bicarbonate and non-bicarbonate buffers help minimize the magnitude of pH disturbance, with the former being the  $CO_2$ -HCO<sub>3</sub> system and the latter including phosphate buffers and haemoglobin (Hb) (due to the presence of histidine and their associated imidazole side chains that buffer  $H^+$  at physiological pH) (Shartau and Brauner, 2014). Fishes, in general, have lower blood and tissue buffer values than other vertebrates (Cameron, 1989a; Heisler, 1984). Within the blood, however, buffer values vary among fishes, with the more basal groups (chondrichthyans, basal actinopterygians) having higher blood buffer values than teleosts (Berenbrink et al., 2005). When the capacity of the blood to buffer against acid-base disturbances is exceeded, pH changes occur and compensation typically occurs by net transport of acidbase equivalents between the fish and environment, with the gills, kidney and intestine all involved; the gills are believed to account for >90% of the net acid-base relevant ion transport during pH compensation (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Heisler, 1984).

In a few fish species, models of the cellular mechanism(s) underlying compensation of the extracellular compartment in response to an acidosis have been developed. Within the gill epithelium of *O. mykiss*, mitochondrion rich cells (MRCs) (or ionocytes) are believed to be the primary site of extracellular acid-base regulation. Two populations of MRCs exist, those with peanut lectin agglutinin (PNA) binding sites on their apical membranes (PNA<sup>+</sup> MRCs) and those lacking such sites (PNA<sup>-</sup> MRCs). PNA<sup>-</sup> MRC are proposed to be responsible for acid excretion where it is believed that H<sup>+</sup> elimination occurs via an apical NHE, or a VHA coupled to an apical epithelial Na<sup>+</sup> channel (ENaC). The result is hyperpolarization of the plasma membrane by transporting H<sup>+</sup> via VHA across the membrane, resulting in a favorable electrochemical gradient for diffusion of Na<sup>+</sup> via ENaC (Hwang et al., 2011). Net acid excretion is then achieved by the combined actions of apical H<sup>+</sup> efflux and basolateral HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> influx. Exchange of HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> is believed to occur via a HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>/Cl<sup>-</sup> exchanger, such as those found in the SLC4

4

or SLC26 family and by the Na<sup>+</sup>/HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> co-transporter (NBC – also found in the SLC4 family) (Evans et al., 2005; Hwang et al., 2011; Parks et al., 2009; Perry et al., 2009). The PNA<sup>+</sup> MRC is proposed to be responsible for base excretion in which the apical membrane HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>/Cl<sup>-</sup> exchanger links Cl<sup>-</sup> uptake to HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> excretion. Apical membrane HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> efflux along with basolateral H<sup>+</sup> efflux, via a VHA, would result in net transepithelial base excretion (Gilmour and Perry, 2009; Hwang et al., 2011). Using these membrane transporters, net acid-base equivalents can be transported from the blood to the environment to ensure pH homeostasis. In other freshwater fishes, the proposed mechanisms are similar to *O. mykiss*; for example, freshwater zebrafish *Danio rerio* (Gilmour and Perry, 2009), tilapia *Oreochromis mossambicus* (Hwang et al., 2011) and medaka *Oryzias latipes* (Hsu et al., 2014) use an apical NHE to remove H<sup>+</sup> catalyzed from CO<sub>2</sub>, while HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> is moved to the blood via basolateral Na<sup>+</sup>/HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> (NBC) or Cl<sup>-</sup>/HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> (AE).

Regardless of the specific cellular mechanism(s) employed, in most fishes studied to date, compensation of pH<sub>e</sub> during hypercarbia exposure is associated with a net increase in plasma  $[HCO_3^-]$  that is matched by an equimolar reduction in plasma  $[Cl^-]$ (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Heisler, 1984). The extent of this HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> elevation, however, appears to be limited, in that plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] rarely exceeds 27–33 mM during exposure to acute hypercapnia, which is referred to as the "apparent bicarbonate concentration threshold" (Heisler, 1984). This threshold is associated with an absence of complete  $pH_e$ compensation in most fishes during acute exposure to CO<sub>2</sub> tensions beyond 2–2.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> (Baker et al., 2009a; Brauner and Baker, 2009) (Fig. 1.3). Although the basis of this threshold is unknown, recent work has supported the hypothesis that pH<sub>e</sub> compensation during acute hypercarbia may be limited by the relative decrease in plasma Cl<sup>-</sup> levels to avoid hypochloremia (Baker et al., 2015). Teleosts typically have plasma [CI] of 125 – 168 mM (Edwards and Marshall, 2013), of which approximately 17-20% can be exchanged with  $HCO_3^-$  before the bicarbonate concentration threshold is reached at approximately 27-33 mM HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>. In fish with higher plasma [Cl<sup>-</sup>], a similar pattern is observed; for example, the osmo- and iono-conforming Pacific hagfish Eptatretus stoutii has a plasma [Cl<sup>-</sup>] of ~458 mM and, perhaps as a result, hagfish are able to increase plasma  $[HCO_3]$  to >80 mM, driving pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> recovery during exposure to severe

hypercarbia (*P*CO<sub>2</sub> of ~6.5 kPa) (Baker et al., 2015). Compensation of pH<sub>e</sub> during acute hypercarbia is affected by the physicochemical characteristics of the surrounding water, such as the levels of acid–base relevant counter-ions (Larsen and Jensen, 1997). In contrast to acute hypercarbia, chronic CO<sub>2</sub> exposure allows some teleosts to elevate [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] well beyond this threshold, aiding pH<sub>e</sub> compensation. *O. mykiss* subjected to increasing hypercarbia over three days to reach 3.5 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, and maintained at this level for an additional three days, had a blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] of 66 mM (Dimberg, 1988). Similarly, *A. anguilla* gradually exposed to and maintained at 6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> for six weeks had plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] of 73 mM (McKenzie et al., 2003). Differences between acute and chronic compensation indicate that different mechanisms may underlie compensation to long-term hypercarbia exposures, a possibility that remains relatively unexplored.

#### 1.1.2 Intracellular compartment

Although all cells have the capacity for some degree of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (Boron, 2004; Occhipinti and Boron, 2015; Putnam and Roos, 1997; Vaughan-Jones et al., 2009), in animals that employ coupled pH regulation, cells cannot fully compensate pH<sub>i</sub> during a large sustained reduction in pH<sub>e</sub>; this has been thoroughly examined *in vivo* and *in vitro* in a number of species. In fishes that exhibit coupled pH regulation, compensation of pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> occurs over the initial 24–96 h during sustained hypercarbia exposure (Fig. 1.1), with pH<sub>i</sub> compensation usually occurring more rapidly that of pH<sub>e</sub>, partly because intracellular fluids typically display a lower pH than the extracellular blood environment, which places the pK' of the CO<sub>2</sub>–HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> reaction (pK' = 6.1) closer to pH<sub>i</sub> (typically 6.3 – 7.0). Thus, relatively less HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> is required to compensate pH<sub>i</sub> compared to pH<sub>e</sub>. This recovery is further aided by the greater buffering capacity of intracellular fluids, which moderates the initial pH disturbance (Brauner et al., 2004; Occhipinti and Boron, 2015; Ultsch, 1996).

#### 1.1.3 In vivo studies of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

Findings from *in vivo* studies conducted on a relatively small selection of fishes, amphibians, reptiles and mammals have established that pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is coupled to pH<sub>e</sub> regulation. In fishes, respiratory and metabolic acidoses typically lead to reductions in

pH<sub>i</sub> and pH<sub>e</sub>. For example, *E. stoutii* exposed to hypercarbia exhibited reduced pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, brain, liver and muscle (Baker et al., 2015); *R. ocellata* exposed to hypercarbia had reduced pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, brain and muscle; lemon sole *Parophrys vetulus* exposed to hypercarbia had reduced pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> heart, brain and muscle (Wright et al., 1988), cod *Gadus morhua* exposed to hypercarbia had reduced pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> heart, brain and muscle (Wright et al., 1988), cod *Gadus morhua* exposed to hypercarbia had reduced pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, liver and muscle (Larsen et al., 1997), and *O. mykiss* experiencing hypercapnia had reduced pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> of brain and muscle (Wood and LeMoigne, 1991) (see Shartau et al., 2016a for an overview). Similarly, metabolic acidoses also reduced pH<sub>i</sub> of liver and muscle in starry flounder *Platichthys stellatus* (Milligan and Wood, 1987b), and heart and muscle pH<sub>i</sub> in sea raven *Hemitripterus americanus* (Milligan and Farrell, 1986).

In adult tetrapods, coupled pH regulation is observed in all taxa where pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> have been measured during an acute respiratory acidosis. Exposure of the cane toad *Bufo marinus* (Snyder and Nestler, 1991; Toews and Heisler, 1982), knight anole *Anolis equestris* and desert iguana *Dipsosaurus dorsalis* (Snyder et al., 1995) to 5 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> for 1 h resulted in a respiratory acidosis with severe reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub>; reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> were observed in western painted turtles *Chrysemys picta bellii* up to 6 h during a severe acute respiratory acidosis associated with diving (Wasser et al., 1991). Similarly, *Rana catesbeiana* tadpoles exposed to 5 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> resulted in reduced pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> of tail muscle and liver (Busk et al., 1997). Simultaneous reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> also occur during an acute metabolic acidosis following exhaustive exercise in the saltwater crocodile *Crocodylus porosus* (Baldwin et al., 1995).

In mammals subjected to an acute respiratory acidosis, similar responses are observed. In adult dogs (Arieff et al., 1976) and cats (Yaksh and Anderson, 1987) pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> were reduced following exposure to  $\geq 8$  kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> for 3 h and 10 min, respectively. In guinea pigs exposed to 15 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> there was an uncompensated reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> of lung, kidney, heart and muscle between 2 and 8 h of exposure, but at 7 days, pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> exhibited compensation of 68% and 80–106%, respectively; a response indicative of coupled pH regulation (Wood and Schaefer, 1978). This pattern has been corroborated in rats (Gonzalez and Clancy, 1986b) and hamsters (Malan et al., 1985) during acute hypercarbia exposure. Thus, in all adult amniotes investigated to date *in vivo* (dog, cat, rat, hamster, guinea pig, western painted turtle, knight anole and desert iguana), an acute respiratory acidosis results in reduced  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$ , and compensation occurs through coupled pH regulation, as has been the case for a relatively small number of fish species that have been examined.

Although vertebrates are the focus of this thesis, it is worth noting that limited studies on invertebrates subjected to respiratory acidoses demonstrate coupled reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub>, similar to that of vertebrates. In the few studies where both pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> have been measured during acute severe hypercarbia, reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> in a land snail *Otala lactea* (Barnhart and McMahon, 1988), deep sea bivalve *Acesta excavata* (Hammer et al., 2011), cuttlefish *Sepia officinalis* (Gutowska et al., 2010) and peanut worm *Sipunculus nudus* (Portner et al., 1998) have been observed.

#### 1.1.4 In vitro pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

In the many cell culture studies that have examined  $pH_i$  regulation following transitory reductions in  $pH_e$  (Bouyer et al., 2004; Filosa et al., 2002; Furimsky et al., 1999; Goldstein et al., 2000; Huynh et al., 2011b; Liu et al., 1990; Nottingham et al., 2001; Ritucci, 2005; Salameh et al., 2014), only a few have been conducted in the presence of sustained and elevated  $CO_2$ . For example, isolated trout hepatocytes were unable to recover  $pH_i$  in the presence of hypercarbia (Huynh et al., 2011b); this dependency of  $pH_i$  on  $pH_e$  is consistent with previous studies in trout and carp during chemically-induced anoxia (Krumschnabel et al., 2001).

Other studies using metabolic acid–base challenges are informative about the relationship between  $pH_i$  and  $pH_e$ . The general pattern shown in these studies in vertebrates is that (1) reducing  $pH_e$  causes  $pH_i$  to be reduced and (2) complete recovery does not occur until the starting  $pH_e$  is re-established (Occhipinti and Boron, 2015; Putnam and Roos, 1997; Vaughan-Jones et al., 2009). For example, when a metabolic acidosis was induced in a variety of mouse cell types (hippocampal neurons, astrocytes, medullary raphe neurons, colon cancer cells, skeletal muscle cells, macrophages, dendritic cells, melanocytes and keratinocytes) by lowering the external fluid [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] to reduce  $pH_e$ , the  $pH_i$  of all cell types was reduced and only fully recovered following the return of  $pH_e$  to control values (Salameh et al., 2014). Generally, *in vitro* studies indicate

that acute changes in external or environmental pH will rapidly affect  $pH_i$ . Although  $pH_i$  recovers in all cells once the source of the external acidosis is removed, most vertebrate cells are unable to avoid an acute reduction in  $pH_i$  when  $pH_e$  is reduced in a cell culture environment, characteristic of coupled pH regulation (Fig. 1.1).

This relationship between  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$  is also observed during early development. When mouse (Siyanov and Baltz, 2013; Zhao and Baltz, 1996), hamster (Lane, 1999), bovine (Lane and Bavister, 1999) and human (Phillips et al., 2000) preimplantation embryos are subjected to an acidosis or alkalosis, they exhibit a decrease or increase in  $pH_i$ , respectively. These embryonic cells can typically compensate  $pH_i$  once environmental pH is returned to control values, although mammalian oocytes may not possess the capacity for  $pH_i$  regulation initially, instead relying on surrounding granulosa cells to correct ooplasmic pH (FitzHarris and Baltz, 2009). However, in sea urchins, larvae are able to fully compensate  $pH_i$  of primary mesenchyme cells during a hypercarbic-induced acidosis, and are able to accomplish this in the absence of  $pH_e$ compensation in the body cavity (Stumpp et al., 2012).

#### 1.1.5 Cellular mechanisms of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

The above studies indicate that pH<sub>i</sub> compensation during acid-base disturbances is almost always associated with pH<sub>e</sub> compensation and thus pH<sub>i</sub> is dependent on some degree of extracellular control of pH. Due to the importance of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, numerous studies have investigated the transporters involved in a variety of cell types in various species. The transporters involved in pH<sub>i</sub> regulation generally include isoforms of acidtransporting Na<sup>+</sup>/H<sup>+</sup> exchanger (NHE), V-type H<sup>+</sup>-ATPase (VHA), and base-transporting HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>/Cl<sup>-</sup> [anion exchangers (AE) also referred to as Cl<sup>-</sup>/HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> exchanger (CBE)] and Na<sup>+</sup>/HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> co-transporter (NBC) families. In general, during an acidosis, cells extrude H<sup>+</sup> to the extracellular space via extrusion of intracellular H<sup>+</sup> or uptake of extracellular HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>; the net effect being an increase in pH<sub>i</sub>. The response to an alkalosis is the opposite, with the cell seeking to increase net H<sup>+</sup> concentration. In addition to those classic acid-base transporters, a lactate-H<sup>+</sup> cotransporter (monocarboxylate transporter; MCT) has been found to function during hypoxia (where metabolic acidosis typically occurs) to remove intracellular lactate and H<sup>+</sup>. The transport of H<sup>+</sup> via MCT is facilitated by carbonic anhydrase (CA) which catalyzes the  $CO_2 + H_2O \Leftrightarrow H^+ + HCO_3^-$  reaction to provide the MCT with  $H^+$  (Parks and Pouysségur, 2017; Vaughan-Jones et al., 2009).

These mechanisms have been investigated in various vertebrate cell culture studies, including teleost hepatocytes (Ahmed, 2006; Furimsky et al., 2000; Huynh et al., 2011b), mammalian preimplantation embryos (FitzHarris and Baltz, 2009; Siyanov and Baltz, 2013), cardiac cells in avian embryos (Liu et al., 1990) and mammalian cardiac cells (Vaughan-Jones et al., 2009). Additionally, owing to the putative role of pH changes in cancer tumors, there is interest in understanding the mechanism of pH regulation in tumor cells. These cells are very resistant to chronic external acidosis, which is made possible via efficient pH regulatory systems. The tumor environment can reach nearly pH 6, yet tumor cells commonly demonstrate an alkaline pH<sub>i</sub> despite this chronic metabolic acidosis, which is favorable for cellular metabolism and proliferation (Parks and Pouysségur, 2017; Reshkin et al., 2014); pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in tumor cells may represent the extreme capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in vertebrates, despite their maladaptive nature to the organism.

#### 1.1.6 $pH_e$ and $pH_i$ regulation beyond the bicarbonate concentration threshold

The above studies indicate there is an intimate relationship between the regulation of  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$ , and the inability to regulate the former limits the regulation of the latter. While vertebrates may tolerate extracellular acidoses of prolonged periods, they are not typically tolerant of severe changes in  $pH_i$ , even if  $pH_e$  recovers. In marine fishes, intracellular acidosis of heart was suggested to be the cause of mortality even though  $pH_e$  was compensated over the following 8 h in response to severe hypercarbia (Hayashi et al., 2004); similarly, reduction in muscle  $pH_i$ , not  $pH_e$ , was hypothesized to be the ultimate cause of mortality in trout following exhaustive exercise (Wood et al., 1983).

In fishes, the dependence of  $pH_i$  regulation on  $pH_e$  is particularly problematic when considering the limit of  $pH_e$  compensation during CO<sub>2</sub> exposure imposed by the bicarbonate concentration threshold (Fig. 1.3). As previously indicated, typically fishes cannot compensate  $pH_e$  beyond *ca*. 2 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, thus regulation of  $pH_i$  is also hindered in these fishes and represents a major limitation of coupled  $pH_e/pH_i$  regulation. Despite the putative limits restricting  $pH_e$ , and thus  $pH_i$ , compensation to approximately 2 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, many fishes appear to tolerate these conditions without the expected morbidity or mortality. Acid-base regulation in a few fishes exposed to >4 kPa  $PCO_2$  has revealed the use of a novel strategy of acid-base regulation in which pH<sub>e</sub> is reduced, and remains uncompensated, but pH<sub>i</sub> is remains tightly regulated (Baker et al., 2009a; Brauner et al., 2004; Heisler, 1982); this strategy is referred to as preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and is discussed below.

#### 1.2 Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is defined as  $\Delta pH_i/\Delta pH_e \leq 0$  immediately following onset of an acid-base disturbance. This is associated with complete pH<sub>i</sub> regulation of heart, brain, liver and muscle despite large reductions in pHe that may approach 1 pH unit, and has been proposed to confer exceptional hypercarbia tolerance (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau et al., 2016a). Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was first documented during forced air breathing (induced by aquatic hypoxia) of Synbranchus marmoratus, the marbled swamp eel, an Amazonian air breathing teleost. The treatment resulted in an increase in blood PCO<sub>2</sub> to 3.5 kPa after 96 h causing a reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> but no change in heart or muscle pH<sub>i</sub> (Heisler, 1982). Two decades following Heisler's work, Brauner et al. (2004) observed limited pH<sub>e</sub> compensation but a remarkable ability for regulation of pH<sub>i</sub> during short-term environmental hypercarbia in *Pterygoplichthys pardalis* armoured catfish, a tropical air breather found in the Amazon River. Pterygoplichthys pardalis preferentially regulated pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, liver and white muscle during 24 and 72 h exposure to 1.9 and 4.3 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, respectively; during these exposures, pH<sub>e</sub> was reduced and was not compensated for. The strategy of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was considered to be rare amongst vertebrates by Brauner et al. (2004) and possibly associated with air breathing or living in ion-poor waters, such as those of the Amazon River basin.

More recently, Baker et al. (2009a) observed the first example of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation in a non-air breathing fish, *Acipenser transmontanus*, the white sturgeon. This is a basal euteleostom fish, which tightly protected  $pH_i$  despite severe  $pH_e$  reduction of *ca*. 0.8 pH units during 48 h exposure to 6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>. Similar to *S. marmoratus* and *P. pardalis*, *A. transmontanus* experience a large uncompensated reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> during

hypercarbia exposure but fully protect pH of heart, brain, liver and white muscle. pH<sub>i</sub> is exceptionally well protected, such that pH<sub>i</sub> of heart and brain experience an increase in pH, becoming slightly alkalotic relative to their normocarbic pH (Baker et al., 2009a); exposure to 12 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> for 6 h reduced pH<sub>e</sub> by ~1.0 pH unit, while liver pH<sub>i</sub> increased by 0.2 pH units (Baker and Brauner, 2012). Protection of pH<sub>i</sub> during exposure to hypercarbia in *A. transmontanus* appears to be nearly instantaneous. When heart pH<sub>i</sub> was measured in real time at 2-minute intervals using magnetic resonance imaging (MRI), there was no evidence for heart muscle pH<sub>i</sub> ever decreasing (Baker, 2010). This use of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during severe acute hypercarbia does not appear to be metabolically costly as whole animal metabolic rate during exposure to 6 and 12 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> corresponded to 30 and 60% reduction in MO<sub>2</sub>, respectively (Baker and Brauner, 2012).

That preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation appears to confer exceptional CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance may be due to the protection of intracellular pH of critical tissues (e.g. heart and brain). While some marine fishes demonstrate tremendous capacity for pH<sub>e</sub> compensation during severe acute hypercarbia exposure, mortality typically occurs despite recovery of pH<sub>e</sub>; this is postulated to be due to changes to cardiac performance (e.g. cardiac output, contractility) which leads to a reduction in organismal oxygen supply (Hayashi et al., 2004). In contrast, cardiac performance is also fully protected during exposures up to 5 and 6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> in *P. pardalis* (Hanson et al., 2009) and *A. transmontanus* (Baker et al., 2011), respectively, which is believed to be associated with complete protection of heart pH<sub>i</sub>. Reduction in brain pH is associated with loss of equilibrium in *Cyprinus carpio* (common carp) (Yoshikawa et al., 1994) and reduced muscle pH was hypothesized to be the cause of post-exercise mortality in *O. mykiss* (Wood et al., 1983).

#### 1.2.1 Mechanisms of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

The mechanism(s) of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation are unknown (Brauner and Baker, 2009), but likely involve transporters identified for  $pH_i$  regulation; however, the specific mechanism(s) could be most effectively be investigated using cell culture. *Acipenser transmontanus* primary liver cells were exposed to 6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> for 19-50 h experienced an initial  $pH_i$  reduction which was compensated despite a sustained

extracellular acidosis (Huynh et al., 2011a); this is in contrast to a similar study using trout hepatocytes exposed to hypercarbia as these cells never recovered pH<sub>i</sub> while hypercarbia was maintained (Huynh et al., 2011b). The response *in vitro* differs from *in vivo* as liver pH<sub>i</sub> in sturgeon is not reduced during hypercarbia (Baker and Brauner, 2012; Baker et al., 2009a), which suggests that liver pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during hypercarbia is influenced by extrinsic factors (Huynh et al., 2011a). While preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is due to active transport of acid-base equivalents (Baker et al., 2009a), the relatively high buffer capacity of the intracellular compartments compared to the blood and extracellular fluid is likely beneficial in ensuring there are no initial pH<sub>i</sub> changes at the onset of the acid-base disturbance.

#### 1.3 Hypercarbia and acid-base regulation – a role for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation?

Due to the prevalence of hypercarbia in various environments, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may be important for conferring CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance in these habitats. High environmental  $CO_2$  is common in many environments, particularly in aquatic ecosystems (Marcé et al., 2015; McNeil and Sasse, 2016; Raymond et al., 2013; Reum et al., 2014), and may arise due to a number of factors, including high aquatic biomass, thermostratification and poor water mixing, surface vegetation, and anaerobic metabolism of microorganisms (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Ultsch, 1996). Since fishes comprise over half of all vertebrate species (~32,000) (Nelson, 2006), hypercarbia may be an important abiotic variable affecting life history and evolution of fishes (Hasler et al., 2016; Ultsch, 1987). Hypercarbia in tropical freshwater may reach >8% PCO<sub>2</sub> (Furch and Junk, 1997; Heisler, 1984; Li et al., 2013) and even temperate waters can experience naturally elevated PCO<sub>2</sub> (Atilla et al., 2011; Butman and Raymond, 2011; Weyhenmeyer et al., 2012); for example, the lower Columbia River can reach 870  $\mu$ atm (*ca.* 0.9 kPa) *P*CO<sub>2</sub> (Park et al., 1969). These values are far in excess of current atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> levels [400 µatm (ca. 0.04 kPa)] and still much greater than projected end of century CO<sub>2</sub> increases that have been predicted due to climate change [ $\sim 1000 \,\mu atm (ca. 0.1 \, kPa)$ ] (McNeil and Sasse, 2016).

Although coupled pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may be generally limited to  $PCO_2 <2$  kPa, many fishes inhabit environments that may experience hypercarbia in excess of >8 kPa  $PCO_2$  (Furch and Junk, 1997; Heisler, 1984), which is beyond their ability to compensate pH<sub>e</sub>. These hypercarbic-prone environments contain a disproportionate percentage of the world's freshwater fishes, particularly within the Amazon and Mekong river basins, as 56% of watersheds with high fish species diversity are located in the tropics (Val et al., 2005). In the marine environment, there are natural CO<sub>2</sub> seeps at some locations which create localized hypercarbia that may reach as high as 7 kPa  $PCO_2$  (Basso et al., 2015; Melzner et al., 2009).

In addition to aquatic hypercarbia, some terrestrial environments experience dramatically higher PCO<sub>2</sub> than ambient atmospheric levels. Some burrows of subterranean rodents may have PCO<sub>2</sub> ranging from 0.22-6.1 kPa (Burda et al., 2007; Shams et al., 2005). Typically, burrow gas composition remains constant, thus hypercarbia is chronic, however, depending on the soil type, some burrows may experience large changes in PCO<sub>2</sub> over the course of hours to days, and thus expose rodents to severe acute hypercarbia; under laboratory conditions, subterranean mole rat Spalax sp. can survive 15 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> and 3 kPa PO<sub>2</sub> for at least 8 h without physiological or behavioural changes (Shams et al., 2005). In cave environments, PCO<sub>2</sub> may reach 6 kPa; in one cave system, numerous species inhabit high CO<sub>2</sub> regions, including troglobites and bats (Howarth and Stone, 1990). Nests of birds and reptiles naturally experience changes in CO<sub>2</sub> levels due to biotic (i.e. metabolic activity of embryos and microorganisms) and abiotic (i.e. diffusion gradients/barriers and nest composition) factors, often resulting in hypercarbic rearing environments for embryos; consequently, nest CO<sub>2</sub> can reach 5-8 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> (Booth, 1998; Grigg et al., 2010; Lutz and Dunbar-Cooper, 1984; Seymour et al., 1986).

The acid-base response in terrestrial animals exposed to these severely hypercarbic conditions has not been well investigated. While animals exposed to chronic hypercarbia in caves and burrows likely adjusted their blood-gas composition to account for those differences, it is not known what happens during acute exposure. Amongst embryonic amniotes only the extracellular response of chicken embryos to severe acute hypercarbia has been investigated (Everaert et al., 2011). Those studies demonstrate that chicken embryos exposed to severe acute hypercarbia experience a typical respiratory acidosis, but there is minimal  $pH_e$  compensation when hypercarbia is maintained for up to 24 h (Andrewartha et al., 2014; Burggren et al., 2012); it is unknown how  $pH_i$  responds.

Due to the severe effects of hypercarbia, and especially given the limitations of coupled pH regulation, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may play an important role as an acidbase regulatory strategy in a number of these species that regularly enter and experience hypercarbic conditions. At the start of this dissertation only four species were known to use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (Fig. 1.4) but it remains uncertain how other species tolerate the severe acid-base disturbances they presumably experience during those conditions.

# **1.4** Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation: a basal euteleostom strategy or embryonic strategy?

Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has been previously hypothesized to (1) confer exceptional CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance and (2) that it evolved in the basal actinopterygians, as it has not been observed in hagfish or elasmobranchs (Brauner and Baker, 2009). However, direct (*Siren lacertina* greater siren (Heisler et al., 1982)) and indirect (*Lepidosiren paradoxa* South American lungfish (Sanchez et al., 2005)) evidence for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation amongst the sarcopterygii suggests that it may have been used in basal Euteleostomi (Sarcopterygii + Actinopterygii) as a strategy of acid-base regulation in adults. Loss of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may have occurred due to changes in physiology requiring coupled pH regulation and where environmental conditions were favorable to permit pH<sub>e</sub> compensation. In teleosts, for example, the evolution of the Root effect likely necessitated regulation of the extracellular compartment during acidoses. This is because of the pH-sensitivity of Root effect hemoglobins, which exhibit a reduction in Hb-O<sub>2</sub> affinity as pH is reduced. Although hemoglobin is confined to the red cells, and teleosts possessing the Root effect regulate RBC pH over the short-term via beta-adrenergic Na<sup>+</sup>/H<sup>+</sup> exchanger (βNHE) to safeguard O<sub>2</sub> transport, this mechanism remains dependent on eventual pH<sub>e</sub> recovery (Berenbrink et al., 2005; Shartau and Brauner, 2014). As the species where preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has been identified do not possess a Root effect, nor do they have RBC  $\beta$ NHEs (Berenbrink et al., 2005), RBC pH<sub>i</sub> is not regulated (Baker et al., 2009a; Brauner et al., 2004) and thus H<sup>+</sup> exchange is largely passive across the RBC membrane. However, because Hb-O<sub>2</sub> affinity is not affected to a large degree by changes in pH in these species, an uncompensated pH<sub>e</sub> acidosis may not be detrimental to O<sub>2</sub> transport. Based on these data, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was hypothesized to have evolved in the basal euteleostomi and retention or loss in extant euteleostomi groups was driven by either environmental (e.g. hypercarbia) and/or physiological constraints (e.g. Root effect).

Alternatively, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in adults may represent the retention of the embryonic capacity for intracellular pH regulation. Although few studies have characterized pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during vertebrate development, there is evidence that earlystage embryos are capable of pH regulation just after fertilization, and mammalian oocvtes and embryos are able to recover from an intracellular acid-base disturbance of almost 1 pH unit (FitzHarris and Baltz, 2009; Lane, 1999). Work on fish has also shown this pattern as early-stage zebrafish embryos exposed to 3.3 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> for 2 h in vitro display a respiratory acidosis, but are still able to restore pH<sub>i</sub> to pre-hypercarbic values (Molich and Heisler, 2005). Similarly, sea urchin larvae are able to fully compensate pH<sub>i</sub> of primary mesenchyme cells during a hypercarbic-induced acidosis in the absence of pH<sub>e</sub> compensation in the body cavity (Stumpp et al., 2012), suggesting that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may not be limited to vertebrates; no evidence presently exists for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in adult invertebrates (Shartau et al., 2016a). These studies indicate that during an acute acidosis cells have the capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> compensation at the earliest developmental time points. It is unknown for how long embryos retain this capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, as it may be reduced or enhanced following the appearance of the extracellular space and the growth of organs involved in regulating pH<sub>e</sub>; additionally, the above findings are from *in vitro* studies and, as indicated previously, these may or may not be representative of in vivo responses during an acid-base disturbance. Beyond the earliest developmental stages, acid-base regulation has been poorly studied in embryonic vertebrates; however, several studies to date have examined the response of

16

late-stage chicken (*Gallus gallus*) embryos to respiratory and metabolic acidoses (Everaert et al., 2011). Exposing chicken embryos *in vivo* to severe acute respiratory or metabolic acidosis for up to 24 h results in large reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> that are not fully compensated yet the embryos survive (Burggren et al., 2012; Mueller et al., 2014); while pH<sub>i</sub> was not measured, the changes in pH<sub>e</sub> are consistent with pH<sub>e</sub> changes observed in fish that preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> (Brauner and Baker, 2009). Adult amniotes use coupled pH regulation (Cameron, 1989b; Shartau et al., 2016a), but during embryonic development in which high CO<sub>2</sub> exposure may occur, they may utilize preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation to cope with the acid-base disturbance. Based on this limited embryonic data, I hypothesized that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is an embryonic strategy of acid-base regulation that is retained or lost throughout development. Insufficient information existed to support or reject these ideas pertaining to preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as either a basal euteleostom or embryonic strategy of acid-base regulation; this was focus of investigation for my thesis.

#### **1.5** Thesis objective and organization

Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may provide a way to avoid the putative limits of coupled pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, and thus allow those species to tolerate and survive challenging levels of CO<sub>2</sub> exposure. The pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> responses of species using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is wholly different from those using coupled pH regulation (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau et al., 2016a); however, little about preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is known. The objective of this thesis is to investigate the usage, distribution/prevalence, and origin of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as a strategy of acid-base regulation in vertebrates. In this thesis, the general objective is addressed in the subsequent four chapters: 1) Is preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation a general strategy of acid-base regulation in white sturgeon subjected to a range of acid-base regulation among a diverse range of fish species? 3 and 4) How does the strategy of acid-base regulation as an adult?

# 1.5.1 Is preferential $pH_i$ regulation a general strategy of acid-base regulation in white sturgeon subjected to a range of acid-base disturbances?

Studies observing preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation have all been conducted during hypercarbic conditions (Shartau et al., 2016a) and it is uncertain whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation also confers protection against non-hypercarbic induced acidoses. In *P. pardalis* and *A. transmontanus*, it is clear that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation allows tissues to be fully protected against a range of hypercarbic exposures. However, fishes are often exposed to various other conditions that may pose challenges for acid-base regulation (e.g. hypoxia and exercise) and it is unknown if preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulating species are able to confer the same degree of protection during these other types of acid-base disturbances. As the origins of respiratory and metabolic acidoses are different, it is uncertain whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation functions in the latter, or if it does, if it confers the same degree of pH<sub>i</sub> protection; more specifically, is preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation a general strategy of acid-base regulation?

Chapter 2 seeks to address this question using *A. transmontanus* as their capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has been investigated numerous times during hypercarbia (Baker and Brauner, 2012; Baker et al., 2011; Baker et al., 2009a; Shaughnessy et al., 2015). I hypothesized that the tremendous capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in *A. transmontanus* during hypercarbia reflects the use of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as a general strategy of acid-base regulation. This was investigated by subjecting *A. transmontanus* to conditions creating severe metabolic (exhaustive exercise, anoxia, and air exposure) and non-hypercarbic respiratory acidoses (hyperoxia). Following exposure to various treatments, fishes were sampled for pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, brain, liver, and white muscle to determine their acid-base regulatory response. This chapter will also inform on whether non-hypercarbic acidoses can be used in future studies to assess the presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, and if existing literature can be used to infer on the strategy of acid-base regulation.

# 1.5.2 Is preferential $pH_i$ regulation a common strategy of acid-base regulation among a diverse range of fish species?

At the start of this dissertation research, only three fishes had been identified to use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, suggesting limited use of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in fishes (Fig. 1.4). However, as few studies have measured pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> concurrently, and only amongst a relatively limited number of species, it is uncertain as to whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is truly a rare strategy as suggested by Brauner et al. (2004). As many fishes inhabit environments prone to severe hypercarbia, with  $PCO_2$  reaching well beyond the putative capacity for pH<sub>e</sub> regulation (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Heisler, 1984), it is likely that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is more widely used; especially given that two of the three species are both tropical air breathers, it seems likely that other tropical/Amazonian fishes would possess this ability for pH regulation. Aside from those three preferential pH<sub>i</sub>-regulating fishes, the general strategy for acid-base regulation amongst fishes (and vertebrates) is coupled pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. But, is preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation a unique strategy in a world characterized by coupled pH regulation, or is the former more common than current data suggest?

Chapter 3 seeks to address the question of whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a common strategy of acid-base regulation in response to severe acute hypercarbia. I hypothesize that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a widespread strategy amongst fishes used during severe acute hypercarbia. This was investigated by conducting a survey that included 20 fish species from groups ranging from basal to derived, including lamprey, lungfish, elasmobranchs, basal actinopterygians, and various teleosts to assess the presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Using a CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay developed for this purpose, the acute CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance of fishes was first determined, then presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was determined directly via pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> measurements following hypercarbia exposure, or indirectly via CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance. This chapter will provide a better understanding of the distribution of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, and how fishes tolerate and survive in hypercarbic environments.

# **1.5.3** *How does the strategy of acid-base regulation shift throughout development?* Acid-base regulation is a critical physiological process and regulation is present

early in development, starting with egg and zygote (FitzHarris and Baltz, 2009; Johnson and Epel, 1981; Lane, 1999; Molich and Heisler, 2005). While these early developmental stages do not appear to completely avoid pH<sub>i</sub> changes when subjected to such conditions designed to induce an acid-base disturbance, they are capable of adjusting intracellular pH (Johnson and Epel, 1981; Molich and Heisler, 2005). Experiments at these early developmental stages demonstrate cells have robust capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation; however, early in development the tissues have not formed, nor is the extracellular space developed, which makes comparisons with adult acid-base strategies inherently difficult. Following the development of tissues and the extracellular space, there may be changes in acid-base regulatory physiology as well, however, this has not been investigated.

Embryonic invertebrate (Shartau et al., 2010), fish (Ciuhandu et al., 2007) and amniote (Booth, 1998; Grigg et al., 2010) species may experience challenging environmental conditions (e.g. hypoxia) that are more severe than they would experience as adults. These differences between embryo and adult may lead to different degrees of acid-base disturbances for which different strategies may be employed, such as preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation or coupled pH regulation. Little is known about acid-base regulation during embryonic development in most animals; however, due in part to the large size of amniote embryos, some work has looked at bird and reptile embryos. Adult amniotes do not typically experience severe hypercarbia naturally, but when they are subjected to hypercarbia they utilize coupled pH regulation; this response in embryos has not been well investigated (Everaert et al., 2011), which is perhaps surprising given the severity of hypercarbia some embryonic reptiles and birds may experience (Booth, 1998; Grigg et al., 2010; Lutz and Dunbar-Cooper, 1984; Seymour et al., 1986). Embryonic amniotes do not have the similar physiological tools of adults to respond to respiratory acidoses via adjustment to ventilation and they may be constrained by nest and eggshell diffusion (Erasmus et al., 1971), thus, their acid-base regulatory response may differ. Studies on embryonic chickens suggest they are resilient to very high  $CO_2$  and can tolerate prolonged periods of an uncompensated reduction in pH<sub>e</sub>, suggesting amniote embryos may have a greater capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> protection than adults.

Chapter 4 investigates the strategy of acid-base regulation during development of a hypercarbic tolerant amniote, *Chelydra serpentina* (common snapping turtle); adult

20
turtles are known to use coupled pH regulation (Wasser et al., 1991). I hypothesized that embryonic *C. serpentina* would preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> in response to acid-base disturbances. This was investigated by exposing *C. serpentina* embryos at 70 and 90% to hatch, and yearlings to severe acute hypercarbic hypoxia exposure and measuring pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> of various tissues. This chapter provides the first insight into how amniote embryos regulate both pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> during severe acute acid-base disturbances, and it will inform on how acid-base regulation changes throughout development.

#### 1.5.4 Is preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation an embryonic strategy in amniote embryos?

Indirect evidence suggests chicken embryos use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during severe acid-base challenges (Andrewartha et al., 2014; Burggren et al., 2012) and results from Chapter 4 indicates *C. serpentina* embryos preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> (Shartau et al., 2016b); thus other embryonic amniotes subjected to severe hypercarbia may employ a similar strategy. Another amniote that is known to experience and tolerate severe hypercarbia during development are crocodylians (Eme and Crossley, 2015), which lay eggs in nests where  $PCO_2$  can reach 2-8 kPa (Grigg et al., 2010; Lutz and Dunbar-Cooper, 1984). Little is known about acid-base regulation in oviparous amniote embryos (Everaert et al., 2011).

Chapter 5 investigates the strategy of acid-base regulation in another embryonic amniote. Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is likely to be used by embryonic amniotes that are subjected to severe hypercarbic conditions in nest environments. I hypothesized that *Alligator mississippiensis* (American alligator) embryos preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> during severe acid-base disturbances. This was investigated by exposing *A*. *mississippiensis* embryos at 70% to hatch to severe hypercarbic hypoxia and measuring pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub>; the same developmental time was used at which *C. serpentina* displayed the most robust pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. This chapter provides insight into crocodylian acid-base regulation during development and, along with *C. serpentina*, contribute to understanding how pH regulation in amniotes, and thus, vertebrates.



Figure 1.1: Representation of the typical response of vertebrates utilizing coupled pH regulation during acute sustained hypercapnia. In species utilizing coupled pH regulation, a hypercarbiainduced respiratory acidosis (initiated at t=0) leads to a rapid reduction in both pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub>, with maximal pH depression occurring typically by 3 h or less. Recovery of pH then occurs by 24 h, but the rate of compensation depends on the severity of the pH depression and the ability for net acid excretion to the environment. pH<sub>i</sub> is often compensated more rapidly than pH<sub>e</sub> but complete pH<sub>i</sub> compensation generally requires >50% of complete pH<sub>e</sub> recovery.







Figure 1.3: A theoretical representation of the typical extracellular pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) response to shortterm (<5 days) hypercarbia in fish. Transfer from normocarbia to hypercarbia results in extracellular pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) falling along the blood non-bicarbonate buffer line, which is indicated by the black open arrowhead. pH<sub>e</sub> then recovers along a given  $PCO_2$  isopleth via a net increase in  $HCO_3^-$  in exchange for Cl<sup>-</sup> as indicated by black filled arrowheads. Black filled circles represent final pH<sub>e</sub> values that would be achieved based upon limits to net  $HCO_3^-$  accumulation within 24-96 h exposure to hypercarbia. Shaded bar indicates the greatest pH compensation able to occur at each  $CO_2$  tension, which is believed to be limited by constraints on  $HCO_3^-$  accumulation and is termed the 'bicarbonate concentration threshold'. Most fishes studied to date cannot increase plasma  $HCO_3^-$  beyond 27-35 mmol l<sup>-1</sup> (Baker et al., 2015; Brauner and Baker, 2009; Heisler, 1984). Consequently, compensation for an acute respiratory acidosis (<96 h) during exposure to hypercarbia is incomplete above a  $PCO_2$ of *ca*. 2 kPa in most fishes. Figure modified from Brauner and Baker (2009).



Figure 1.4: Phylogeny showing distribution of preferential intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) regulation and coupled pH regulation amongst vertebrates when exposed to acute >2 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> prior to dissertation research. Species using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during severe acute hypercarbia are indicated in pink, while those using coupled pH regulation are indicated in blue. Empty branches indicate species that will be examined in this dissertation – see Fig. 6.1 for the filled in phylogeny. References are indicated by numbers following species name. 1(Baker et al., 2015), 2(Wood et al., 1990), 3(Snyder and Nestler, 1991), 4(Heisler et al., 1982), 5(Wasser et al., 1991), 6(Snyder et al., 1995), 7(Snyder et al., 1995), 8(Malan et al., 1985), 9(Wood and Schaefer, 1978), 10(Gonzalez and Clancy, 1986a), 11(Yaksh and Anderson, 1987), 12(Arieff et al., 1976), 13(Baker et al., 2009a), 14(Brauner et al., 2004), 15(Wood and LeMoigne, 1991), 16(Larsen et al., 1997), 17(Wright et al., 1988), 18(Heisler, 1982). Phylogenetic relationships are based on (2009) and branch lengths are taken

from various references utilizing fossil and molecular estimates of divergence times (Aschliman et al., 2012; Betancur-R et al., 2013; Betancur-R et al., 2015; Blair, 2005; Macqueen and Johnston, 2014; Meredith et al., 2011; Zhang et al., 2013); the phylogenetic tree was created using Mesquite (Maddison and Maddison, 2017).

# Chapter 2: White Sturgeon (*Acipenser transmontanus*) Acid-Base Regulation Differs in Response to Different Types of Acidoses

# 2.1 Introduction

Acid-base regulation is one of the most important physiological processes in vertebrates due to the effect of pH on proteins, as changes in pH typically alter protein charge, which can change protein function, and ultimately reduce whole animal performance (e.g. reduce heart and skeletal muscle contractility, and alter metabolic pathways) (Occhipinti and Boron, 2015; Putnam and Roos, 1997). Challenges to acidbase homeostasis may have respiratory or metabolic origins, or a combination of the two. A respiratory acidosis results in a reduction in blood pH (extracellular pH; pH<sub>e</sub>) and intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) due to an increase in blood  $PCO_2$ . In fishes, compensation of pH<sub>e</sub> primarily occurs at the gills via net exchange of acid-base relevant ions, whereby an increase in plasma  $[HCO_3]$  occurs and is generally associated with an equimolar decrease in plasma [Cl<sup>-</sup>], which gradually compensates  $pH_e$  at an elevated blood  $PCO_2$  (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Heisler, 1984; Perry and Gilmour, 2006; Shartau et al., 2016a). Similarly, metabolic acidoses reduce  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$ , but the acidosis often originates from the cells as a consequence of increased  $H^+$  and lactate production associated with anaerobic glycolysis (Robergs et al., 2004). Compensation of a metabolic acidosis is primarily dependent on net exchange of acid-base relevant ions at the gills (Evans et al., 2005; Hwang et al., 2011) and to a lesser degree, excretion of acidic equivalents in the form of titratable acidity and ammonium ions through renal pathways (Kwong et al., 2014). Typically, some degree of  $pH_e$  compensation is required for  $pH_i$  compensation as the two are coupled (referred to as 'coupled pH regulation', see Shartau et al., 2016a). Some fishes, such as the white sturgeon Acipenser transmontanus, however, do not follow this pattern and completely regulate  $pH_i$ , often at the expense of  $pH_e$  regulation

and in the face of severe maintained reductions in  $pH_e$ , termed preferential  $pH_i$  regulation (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau et al., 2016a).

Acipenser transmontanus are basal actinopterygians, belonging to the Acipenseriformes and are found along the Pacific coast of North America in the Fraser, Columbia, Sacramento and San Joaquin river systems (Hildebrand et al., 2016). They are one of the most CO<sub>2</sub> tolerant fishes, able to tolerate a hypercarbic-induced respiratory acidosis of at least 12 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> for 6 h, which reduces pH<sub>e</sub> by nearly 1 pH unit and the extracellular acidosis remains uncompensated over this time period (Baker and Brauner, 2012). This ability is attributed to preferential  $pH_i$  regulation of heart, brain, liver and muscle during these exposures (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau et al., 2016a); protection of muscle  $pH_i$  has been observed for up to 10 days at 6 kPa  $PCO_2$ (Shaughnessy et al., 2015). Hypercarbia in A. transmontanus has been well studied (Baker and Brauner, 2012; Baker et al., 2011; Baker et al., 2009a; Cech and Crocker, 2002; Crocker and Cech, 1998; Shartau et al., 2017b), and while severe hypercarbia (> 3 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>) is unlikely to be widely encountered in natural settings, it may occur in aquaculture settings (Crocker and Cech, 1996). Mild hypercarbia (< 1 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>), however, may be frequently experienced by A. transmontanus in their environment and in hatchery settings (Crocker and Cech, 1998). Hypercarbia tolerance is believed to be attributed to the capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as other species (e.g. marbled swamp eel Synbranchus marmoratus, armoured catfish Pterygoplichthys pardalis, striped catfish *Pangasianodon hypophthalmus*, spotted gar *Lepisosteus oculatus* and alligator gar Atractosteus spatula) exhibiting this degree of hypercarbia tolerance also preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> (see Shartau and Brauner, 2014; Shartau et al., 2016a).

Recently, it was observed that preferential  $pH_i$  regulation confers protection against acid-base disturbances in addition to those induced by hypercarbia in the tropical air breathing *P. pardalis* (Harter et al., 2014). The authors concluded that preferential  $pH_i$ regulation may represent a general strategy of acid-base regulation in this species (Harter et al., 2014). Given the tremendous capacity *A. transmontanus* have for preferential  $pH_i$ regulation during hypercarbia, we hypothesized that *A. transmontanus*, similar to *P. pardalis*, utilize preferential  $pH_i$  regulation as a general strategy of acid-base regulation, irrespective of the origin of the disturbance.

To test this hypothesis, A. transmontanus were subjected to either respiratory or metabolic acidoses and their acid-base response was measured. Determining the presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is contingent on inducing a sufficiently severe pH<sub>e</sub> reduction to influence pH<sub>i</sub>; therefore, the treatments to impose acidoses and the sampling times were chosen to ensure a severe pH<sub>e</sub> reduction. For a respiratory acidosis, hyperoxia was used as it has not been previously examined in A. transmontanus, unlike hypercarbia (see above references). The origin of the respiratory acidosis differs between hypercarbia and hyperoxia, whereby the former induces an acidosis due to increased external CO<sub>2</sub>. The latter induces an acidosis arising from reduced ventilatory rate due to high environmental oxygen; thus, reducing CO<sub>2</sub> excretion and leading to an increase in metabolically produced CO<sub>2</sub> (Wood and LeMoigne, 1991), and unlike hypercarbia, hyperoxia does not reduce water pH, which may impair  $pH_e$  regulation in A. transmontanus (Shartau et al., 2017b). Metabolic acidoses were induced via exhaustive exercise, anoxia or air exposure, where the acidosis is generated intracellularly (via anaerobiosis), with the associated acid exported to the extracellular space. Treatments imposing metabolic acidoses often produce a mixed acid-base metabolic and respiratory acidosis (Kieffer et al., 1994; Wang et al., 1994). The response of A. transmontanus to these metabolic acidoses may also inform, to some degree, on the acid-base relevant effects of challenges such as catch and release fishing (McLean et al., 2016) and swimming/migration (Cocherell et al., 2011; Erickson et al., 2002; Geist et al., 2005).

# 2.2 Methods

# 2.2.1 Animal acquisition and holding

All experiments were performed at the International Centre for Sturgeon Studies (ICSS) at Vancouver Island University (VIU) using *A. transmontanus* ( $656 \pm 181$  g). All white sturgeon were maintained in large indoor flow-through tanks in dechlorinated City of Nanaimo tap water [ $61 \mu mol l^{-1} Na^+$ ,  $69 \mu mol l^{-1} Cl^-$  (City of Nanaimo, 2015), pH ~6.6-6.8 (Mojazi Amiri et al., 2009)] at ~15 °C under a simulated natural photoperiod and were fed daily to satiation. Food was withheld 48 h prior to experiments. All experiments

were approved both by the University of British Columbia and Vancouver Island University Animal Care Committees (animal care no: A11-0235; Animal Usage Protocol: 2014-02-R).

# 2.2.2 Experimental protocol

For all treatments, eight white sturgeon were randomly selected from the holding tank and placed in individual black plexi-glass boxes (24 L) with aeration in a recirculating system (flow rate  $\sim$ 3 L min<sup>-1</sup> per box, 15 °C; total water volume of system  $\sim$ 320 L) overnight prior to experiments. Confinement in darkened boxes has been suggested to not stress *A. oxyrinchus* Atlantic or *A. brevirostrum* shortnose sturgeon (Baker et al., 2005a); similarly, juvenile *Scaphirhynchus albus* pallid and hybrid *S. albus* × *S. platorynchus* shovelnose sturgeon have low physiological responses to severe confinement (Barton et al., 2000). Control fish were sampled following overnight holding; experimental manipulations are described below for each individual treatment. Sampling was staggered to ensure adequate time to euthanize, sample each animal and take blood measurements.

# 2.2.3 Respiratory acidosis

Hyperoxia induces a respiratory acidosis via the retention of metabolically produced CO<sub>2</sub>. In this treatment, fish were held overnight, then aeration was stopped to the recirculating system, while aeration to individual tanks was maintained. All boxes were isolated from the recirculating system and rapid O<sub>2</sub> bubbling was initiated in the main header tank to increase O<sub>2</sub> tension to ~80 kPa  $PO_2$  (~15 min). Once achieved, the boxes were re-connected to the recirculating system in a staggered fashion (~20 min), and P<sub>w</sub>O<sub>2</sub> increased to the target tension of ~80 kPa  $PCO_2$  within 15 min. Fish were then exposed to ~80 kPa P<sub>w</sub>O<sub>2</sub> for 180 min to achieve a hyperoxic-induced respiratory acidosis of similar magnitude and duration as previous hypercarbic-induced respiratory acidoses (Baker et al., 2009a; Baker et al., 2015; Brauner et al., 2004).

# 2.2.4 Metabolic acidosis

Metabolic acidoses were induced via exhaustive exercise, anoxia or air exposure. White sturgeon subjected to exhaustive exercise were removed from tanks and subjected to a repeated exhaustive exercise protocol similar to the one used on armoured catfish (Harter et al., 2014). Fish were chased with a plastic stick for 5 min or until the fish was completely exhausted, allowed to rest for 15 min, then chased again until complete exhaustion, which occurred within 15 min.

In the anoxia treatment, after overnight holding, aeration was stopped to the recirculating system, while aeration to the individual tanks was maintained. All boxes were then isolated from the recirculating system and rapid N<sub>2</sub> bubbling was initiated in the main header tank to reduce  $O_2$  tension to <1 kPa  $P_wO_2$  (~15 min). Once achieved, the boxes were re-connected to the recirculating system in a staggered fashion (~20 min), and  $P_wO_2$  decreased to the target tension of <1 kPa  $P_wO_2$  within 15 min. Fish were continuously exposed to <1 kPa  $P_wO_2$  for 5 min; following the anoxia exposure, the box was disconnected and aerated, returning  $P_wO_2$  to >90% saturation within 2 min and fish were then allowed to recover until sampling (see below).

Acipenser transmontanus were exposed to air following overnight holding in individual tanks. In a staggered fashion, water was drained from the respective tank, then a damp cloth was placed over the fish to minimize desiccation and stress; air temperature was  $\sim$ 15 °C. After 45 min, the tank was filled with aerated water and the fish were allowed to recover until sampling.

Fish subjected to exhaustive exercise or anoxia were sampled at 15 or 120 min after the challenge, different time points were used to allow for any redistribution of acidoses and to assess those changes on pH. Due to limited fish numbers, fish subjected to air exposure were only sampled at 15 min post-exposure.

# 2.2.5 Blood sampling, tissue sampling and ions

At the time of sampling, the box in which the fish was held was isolated from the re-circulating system and anesthetic was added to the water (MS-222 0.3 g  $L^{-1}$  buffered with NaHCO<sub>3</sub>) under vigorous aeration to avoid hypoxemia due to reduced ventilation. Once ventilation ceased (<3 min), each fish was turned ventral side up, while gills

remained submerged in aerated water and blood (3 mL) was drawn caudally via a lithium-heparin (1 g L<sup>-1</sup>)- rinsed syringe (5 mL syringe, 23 G1<sup>1</sup>/<sub>4</sub> needle) and placed on ice. Following this procedure, fish were killed via cephalic concussion and the following tissues were removed within 2-3 min, placed in aluminum foil and immediately placed in liquid N<sub>2</sub> in the following order: heart (gently squeezed and patted dry to remove any blood), liver, dorsal white muscle (left side, just posterior of the dorsal fin; skin and red muscle removed), and brain; tissues were stored longer term at -80 °C. Blood was divided into two aliquots. Blood pH and hematocrit (Hct) were measured from one aliquot; the other aliquot was centrifuged (3 min at 10,000 rpm) and plasma was removed for measurement of total CO<sub>2</sub> (TCO<sub>2</sub>), [Cl<sup>-</sup>] and [lactate].

Blood pH was measured using a Radiometer PHM 84 (Copenhagen, Denmark) connected to a Radiometer Analytical SAS pH electrode (GK2401C, Cedex, France) thermostated at 15 °C. RBC pH<sub>i</sub> was measured using the freeze-thaw method as described by Zeidler and Kim (1977). Tissue pH<sub>i</sub> was measured using the metabolic inhibitor tissue homogenate method (MITH; see Appendix for detailed description of this method) (Baker et al., 2009b; Portner et al., 1990). Plasma TCO<sub>2</sub> was measured using a total CO<sub>2</sub> analyzer (Corning model 965 Analyzer); the remaining plasma was used to measure [Cl<sup>-</sup>] ions (HBI model 4425000; digital chloridometer). For determination of plasma [lactate], 200  $\mu$ L 8% perchloric acid was added to 200  $\mu$ L plasma and immediately frozen in LN<sub>2</sub> and stored at -80 °C until assayed for lactate via the method described by Bergmeyer (1983).

# 2.2.6 Calculations and statistical analysis

Plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] and  $PCO_2$  were calculated using TCO<sub>2</sub> and pH values described by Brauner et al. (2004). CO<sub>2</sub> solubility coefficient and the logarithmic acid dissociation constant (pK') for plasma were determined from Boutilier et al. (1984).

All values are expressed as mean  $\pm$  s.e.m. throughout; N=8 for all treatments. Data were compared by Welch's t-test or where multiple treatments were evaluated, data were analyzed by an analysis of variance (ANOVA), followed by Tukey's or Dunnett's post hoc tests or if the data did not meet normality (Shapiro-Wilk normality test) or equal variance (Bartlett's test) assumptions a Kruskal-Wallis test followed by Dunn's multiple comparison test was used (P<0.05). GraphPad Prism (v.5) was used for all statistical analyses and for preparation of figures.

# 2.3 Results

#### 2.3.1 Extracellular acid-base status

The objective of all treatments was to induce a reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> to examine pH changes in the tissues. Here, all treatments were successful in reducing pH<sub>e</sub>, although the severity of pH<sub>e</sub> reduction varied amongst acidoses (Fig. 2.1 and 2.2). A respiratory acidosis induced by 180 min hyperoxia exposure increased blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> to 1 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>. This increase in blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> led to a reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> and an increase in plasma HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> immediately following this exposure (Fig. 2.1).

Acipenser transmontanus exercised to exhaustion experienced a large pH<sub>e</sub> reduction (0.30 units) at 15 min post-exercise along with an increase in  $PCO_2$ , but no change in plasma  $HCO_3^-$  was observed. Compared to 15 min post-exercise, at 120 min, pH<sub>e</sub> was unchanged, but  $PCO_2$  and plasma  $HCO_3^-$  were lower (Fig. 2.2a). Exposure to anoxia reduced pH<sub>e</sub> by only 0.1 units by 15 min post-anoxia and increased  $PCO_2$  and plasma  $HCO_3^-$ ; pH<sub>e</sub>,  $PCO_2$  and plasma  $HCO_3^-$  did not change by 120 min post-anoxia (Fig. 2.2b). Following 45 min air exposure, both blood  $PCO_2$  and plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] increased, while pH<sub>e</sub> decreased by 0.35 units (Fig. 2.2c).

# 2.3.2 Intracellular acid-base status

A hyperoxia-induced respiratory acidosis reduced RBC and muscle pH<sub>i</sub> immediately following 180 min exposure; heart, liver and brain pH<sub>i</sub> did not change (Fig. 2.3).

Exhaustive exercise reduced RBC, liver and muscle  $pH_i$  at 15 and 120 min postexercise, while heart  $pH_i$  was only reduced at 120 min post-exercise; brain  $pH_i$  did not significantly change (Fig. 2.4a). Anoxia exposure reduced  $pH_i$  of RBC, liver and brain at 15 and 120 min post-exposure; muscle  $pH_i$  was reduced at 120 min post-exposure (Fig. 2.4b). Air exposure resulted in a reduction in RBC, liver and muscle pH<sub>i</sub> at 15 min postexposure (Fig. 2.4c).

# 2.3.3 Hematocrit, plasma [CI] and [lactate]

Exhaustive exercise induced the greatest change in these parameters relative to control values, where plasma [Cl<sup>-</sup>], [lactate] and hematocrit all increased following exercise. Hematocrit also increased in the hyperoxia exposure, but not in anoxia or air exposure. Plasma [lactate] was elevated compared to controls after 15 min post-acidosis in anoxia, hyperoxia and air exposure. Plasma [Cl<sup>-</sup>] did not change following anoxia, hyperoxia or air exposure (Table 2.1).

# 2.4 Discussion

The goal of this study was to investigate whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in white sturgeon is a general strategy of acid-base regulation, irrespective of the origin of the acid-base disturbance. Our results indicate that *A. transmontanus* preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> against acidoses of respiratory origin [hyperoxia (this study) and hypercarbia (Baker et al., 2009a)]; however, during the metabolic acidosis treatments (exhaustive exercise, anoxia and air exposure), which created mixed metabolic/respiratory acidoses, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation did not occur uniformly amongst the tissues. These results only partially support the hypothesis and indicate preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation of tissues may occur selectively amongst various acidoses; this differs from *P. pardalis*, where preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was observed to be a general strategy of acid-base regulation (Brauner et al., 2004; Harter et al., 2014). Finally, this study demonstrates that responses to various acidoses may invoke different physiological responses; consequently, caution should be taken when extrapolating results amongst different types of acidoses.

# 2.4.1 White sturgeon preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> during respiratory acidoses

Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation appears to be a general strategy of acid-base regulation during respiratory acidoses in white sturgeon. During hyperoxia, blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> increased

to approximately 1 kPa and reduced  $pH_e$  by 0.15 units at 180 min; this was slightly less severe than previous studies using hypercarbia in A. transmontanus where exposure to 1.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> reduced pH<sub>e</sub> by 0.2 units at 6 h (Fig. 2.5a) (Baker et al., 2009a). The pH<sub>e</sub> reduction in Figure 5a is similar to other studies exposing different sized A. transmontanus to 1.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> for 3 h (Baker and Brauner, 2012; Baker et al., 2011; Shartau et al., 2017b), suggesting there is minimal pH difference between these time points and that fish size is unlikely to affect the magnitude of pH change. Similar to pH<sub>e</sub>, RBC pH<sub>i</sub> was reduced by 0.11 units, indicating that the hyperoxia-induced acidosis was sufficiently severe to reduce pH in a highly buffered tissue lacking capacity for pH regulation and is consistent with the response during hypercarbia (Brauner et al., 2004; Harter et al., 2014). Unlike the blood or RBC, pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, brain and liver did not change, indicating they were protected during hyperoxia (Fig. 2.3). The degree of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation appears to be less than during hypercarbia as heart, brain and liver exhibit an increase in pH<sub>i</sub> following 6 h exposure to 1.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> (Fig. 2.5b) (Baker et al., 2009a). Interestingly, muscle pH<sub>i</sub> was reduced during hyperoxia (Fig. 2.3) but not during hypercarbia (Fig. 2.5b). The reduction in muscle pH<sub>i</sub> may be associated with tissue anaerobiosis as suggested by the increase in plasma lactate during hyperoxia (Table 2.1). The reason for the increase in plasma lactate during hyperoxia is unknown but muscle lactate increased during 24 h exposure to 2 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> (Baker and Brauner, 2012).

Few studies have measured  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$  concurrently during hyperoxia. Hyperoxia induces an increase in blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> arising from the retention of metabolically produced CO<sub>2</sub> of ~1 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>. When *Oncorhynchus mykiss* (rainbow trout) were exposed to 72 h hyperoxia, Hobe et al. (1984) found that  $pH_e$ , and white muscle and whole body  $pH_i$  were reduced; similarly Wood and LeMoigne (1991) observed that  $pH_e$ and  $pH_i$  of brain and muscle were reduced. Not surprisingly, hypercarbia and hyperoxia induce a similar increase in internal blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, and also induce similar changes in  $pH_e$ (Gilmour and Perry, 1994) and  $pH_i$  (Shartau, unpublished observation) in rainbow trout. Respiratory acidoses induced by hyperoxia and hypercarbia appear to result in similar pH changes in both *O. mykiss* and *A. transmontanus*, which exhibit coupled pH regulation and preferential  $pH_i$  regulation, respectively; as the acidoses have similar origins, they may affect pH similarly in these fishes.

#### 2.4.2 Tissue pH<sub>i</sub> is differentially protected following metabolic acidoses

Acipenser transmontanus do not uniformly protect pH<sub>i</sub> following the development of a metabolic acidosis induced by exhaustive exercise, anoxia or air exposure. As expected RBC pH<sub>i</sub> was reduced in all treatments, however, there were also reductions in liver and muscle pH<sub>i</sub>. In contrast, heart pH<sub>i</sub> remained unchanged in all treatments at 15 min post-exposure and brain pH<sub>i</sub> was protected following exhaustive exercise and air exposure (Fig. 2.4). The response of A. transmontanus to the metabolic acidoses indicates that their pattern of response differs from that of *P. pardalis*, which completely protect brain, heart and liver against exhaustive exercise and anoxia (Harter et al., 2014). Compared to respiratory acidoses, A. transmontanus exhibit greater variability with respect to pH regulation amongst metabolic acidoses; this may be due to differences in oxygen availability and demand during conditions leading to metabolic acidoses. Acid production during metabolic acidoses originates from the tissue due to increased anaerobic metabolism following reduced oxygen supply and/or increased oxygen demand. Consequently, anaerobic metabolism will be recruited to different degrees as oxygen supply and demand may change differentially amongst tissues; the observed pH<sub>i</sub> reduction is greatest in white muscle, while heart pH<sub>i</sub> remains well protected.

*Acipenser transmontanus* tightly regulate heart pH<sub>i</sub> during metabolic acidoses (exhaustive exercise, anoxia and air exposure), to a degree similar to that accomplished during respiratory acidoses (hyperoxia and hypercarbia). Heart pH<sub>i</sub> may be more tightly regulated given a) the importance of the heart in O<sub>2</sub> transport and b) that changes in pH<sub>i</sub> may lead to electrical disturbances disrupting cardiac function (Vaughan-Jones et al., 2009). Preferential regulation of heart pH<sub>i</sub> may thus be important to maintain metabolic activity and avoid issues related to cardiac function, particularly during acute acidoses. During hypercarbia (Baker et al., 2011; Hanson et al., 2009) and combined hypercarbia/hypoxia (Shartau et al., 2016b), cardiac performance is maintained along with protection of heart pH<sub>i</sub>. During exercise, heart pH<sub>i</sub> is maintained during exercise of *Hemitripterus americanus* (sea raven) (Milligan and Farrell, 1986) and *Parophrys vetulus* (lemon sole) (Wright et al., 1988). Interestingly, *A. transmontanus* exhibited a small reduction in heart pH<sub>i</sub> 120 min post-exercise; this reduction may have been due to the redistribution of the acidosis from other tissues and/or the persistent elevation of plasma lactate which can influence pH<sub>i</sub> (Vaughan-Jones et al., 2009).

Brain pH<sub>i</sub> was protected following exhaustive exercise and air exposure but not anoxia, where it was reduced by ~0.07 units (Fig. 2.4). Tight regulation of brain pH<sub>i</sub> likely ensures proper metabolic function when sufficient energy supplies exist; however, the brain is one of the most metabolically active tissues and highly sensitive to perturbation of energy supply (Soengas and Aldegunde, 2002). In low O<sub>2</sub> conditions, anaerobic metabolism is insufficient to maintain brain ATP level; thus, in hypoxic/anoxic tolerant animals, the fall in ATP production is partially compensated for by anaerobic ATP production and supplemented by suppression of ATP use (metabolic depression) which together assist brain survival during hypoxia/anoxia (Hochachka, 1986; Nilsson, 2001; Soengas and Aldegunde, 2002). Consequently, reduction in brain pH<sub>i</sub> during anoxia may represent a survival mechanism, where in fact, maintaining pH<sub>i</sub> at normoxic levels would be maladaptive due to the energy required, possibly leading to reduced hypoxia/anoxia tolerance and survival. The difference in O<sub>2</sub> availability for aerobic metabolism may explain in part why the response in anoxia differs from exercise and air exposure.

As exercise requires increased white muscle activity, it would be expected to be the site of the greatest rate of anaerobiosis due to the higher energy demand required during exercise. This in turn could result in high rates of ATP hydrolysis, outpacing ATP production, and consequently creating an excess of protons (Robergs et al., 2004). Consequently, muscle tissue overall would be expected to exhibit the greatest reduction in pH<sub>i</sub> during exhaustive exercise. In this study, muscle pH<sub>i</sub> was reduced by 0.44 units following exhaustive exercise, the largest reduction in pH<sub>i</sub> of any tissue measured; it was also associated with a large increase in plasma lactate (Table 2.1). Reduced muscle pH<sub>i</sub> following anoxia and air exposure may have been a result of a more general reduction in O<sub>2</sub> availability, prompting an increase in the rate of anaerobic metabolism despite reduced activity.

The reduction in liver  $pH_i$  across all metabolic acidoses could indicate that the liver is less capable of  $pH_i$  regulation than other tissues, but this response may also be associated with handling of metabolic waste products (e.g. lactate) (Richards, 2011). For

37

example, in *Carassius auratus* (goldfish), both the liver and white muscle act as a store of glycogen to support whole animal metabolism during anaerobic metabolism (Jibb and Richards, 2008). Indeed, following exercise and anoxia, *C. auratus* reduce muscle pH<sub>i</sub>, possibly due to the accumulation metabolic wastes such as  $H^+$  and lactate arising from the depletion of glycogen stores (Mandic et al., 2008). During hypoxia, goldfish liver and muscle tissues have reduced pH<sub>i</sub> and increased lactate, with pH<sub>i</sub> reduction attributed to regulation of protein synthesis and metabolic reduction (Jibb and Richards, 2008). Reduction in liver and muscle pH are also observed in *Squalus acanthias* (dogfish) during recovery from severe hypoxia (Zimmer and Wood, 2014); these changes parallel those observed in *A. transmontanus* here (Fig. 2.4, Table 2.1).

# 2.4.3 Preferential $pH_i$ regulation may be a general strategy of acid-base regulation in A. transmontanus – but not all tissues are protected all the time

Taken together, these finding illustrate that *A. transmontanus* have different responses to acid-base regulation depending on the source and tissue which the acidosis originates. During respiratory acidoses, pH<sub>i</sub> is preferentially regulated in critical tissues, but following metabolic acidoses induced by exhaustive exercise, anoxia and air exposure, only some tissues are protected (e.g. heart). This pattern differs from *P. pardalis*, which preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> following respiratory (hypercarbia) (Brauner et al., 2004) and metabolic acidoses (exhaustive exercise, anoxia) (Harter et al., 2014); although hyperoxia and air exposure were not been examined in that study. The reason for differences in pH<sub>i</sub> regulation between these two species is unclear. However, it may be due to differences in species specific capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation or it could indicate that acid-base strategies differ between environments (i.e. tropical versus temperate rivers) and that in general, tropical fishes, may have a greater capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation to deal with differences of their environment; uncovering these differences is worthy of further investigation.

# 2.4.4 Conclusions

Sturgeon demonstrate remarkable resilience to a variety of stressors including severe hypercarbia (Baker et al., 2009a), hyperoxia (Bagherzadeh Lakani et al., 2013;

Shartau et al., 2017b), hypoxia (Baker et al., 2005a; Crocker and Cech, 1997; Maxime et al., 1995), exercise (Baker et al., 2005b; Cocherell et al., 2011; Kieffer et al., 2001), aerial exposure (Brauner and Berenbrink, 2007), salinity (Allen et al., 2014; McEnroe and Cech, 1985; Mojazi Amiri et al., 2009; Shaughnessy et al., 2015) and fisheries related stressors (McLean et al., 2016). This study may provide insight into sturgeon acid-base regulation during these stressors, as even though the treatments imposed in this study were severe, they may occasionally be encountered naturally. For example, migrating A. transmontanus may be subjected to acute periods where they exercise to near exhaustion (Cocherell et al., 2011; Geist et al., 2005), and catch and release fishing causes them to exercise to exhaustion while enduring some degree of air exposure (angling events may last between 30 seconds to over 2 hours) (McLean et al., 2016). Additionally, sturgeon are often reared for aquaculture and in these settings, hyperoxia may be encountered and exceed >40 kPa  $PO_2$  (Bagherzadeh Lakani et al., 2013; Espmark and Baeverford, 2009), while hypoxia as low as 4 - 10 kPa  $PO_2$  may be experienced by Atlantic (Gunderson, 1998) and white (Crocker and Cech, 1997) sturgeon in estuaries. While tolerance and survival of these stressors requires a multifaceted physiological response, these results indicate that in A. transmontanus during the acidoses examined, the robust capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may contribute to their overall tolerance during these acid-base challenges. The molecular and cellular mechanism(s) that underlie preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation are unknown and currently under investigation (Shartau et al., 2017b). Further research into this area should provide insight into the differential response of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during acidoses in sturgeon, and possibly inter-specific differences in acid-base regulatory strategy.



Figure 2.1: Effect of a hyperoxia-induced respiratory acidosis in *Acipenser transmontanus* white sturgeon on blood acid-base status. Blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] are presented on a pH-HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> plot. *A. transmontanus* were exposed to 80 kPa  $PO_2$  for 180 min and sampled either prior to (control;  $\bigcirc$ ) or at the end of the exposure ( $\bullet$ ). Values are presented as means ± s.e.m.; N=8. Significant differences (P<0.05) are indicated by different uppercase letters (pH<sub>e</sub>), lowercase letters (blood  $PCO_2$ ) and Greek letters (plasma HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>). Dashed line indicates the blood non-bicarbonate buffer line (-11.9 mM HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> pH unit<sup>-1</sup>) for *A. transmontanus* as determined by Baker et al. (2009a).



Figure 2.2: Effect of metabolic acidoses in *Acipenser transmontanus* (white sturgeon) on blood acid-base status. Blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] are presented on a pH-HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> plot. White sturgeon were subjected to either exhaustive exercise (a), anoxia (5 min exposure; b) or air exposure (45 min; c). Fish were sampled either prior to exposure (control;  $\bigcirc$ ), or following exposure after a 15 (•) or 120 minutes (•; except air exposure which was only sampled at 15 min) recovery period. Values are presented as means ± s.e.m.; N=8. Significant differences (*P*<0.05) are indicated by different uppercase letters (pH<sub>e</sub>), lowercase letters (blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub>) and Greek letters (plasma HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>). Dashed line indicates the blood non-bicarbonate buffer line (-11.9 mM HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> pH unit<sup>-1</sup>) for white sturgeon as determined by Baker et al. (2009a).



Figure 2.3: Effect of a hyperoxia-induced respiratory acidosis in *Acipenser transmontanus* (white sturgeon) on intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) of red blood cells (RBC), heart, liver, brain and white muscle (WM). *Acipenser transmontanus* were exposed to 80 kPa  $PO_2$  for 180 min and sampled either prior to (control; open bar) or at the end of the exposure (shaded bar). Values are presented at means  $\pm$  s.e.m. Asterisk indicate significant differences from control (P<0.05).



Figure 2.4: Effect of metabolic acidoses in *Acipenser transmontanus* (white sturgeon) on intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) of red blood cells (RBC), heart, liver, brain and white muscle (WM). *Acipenser transmontanus* were subjected to either exhaustive exercise (a), anoxia (5 min exposure; b) or air exposure (45 min; c). Fish were sampled either prior to exposure (control; open bar), or following exposure after a 15 (shaded bar) or 120 minutes (closed bar; except air exposure) recovery period. Values are presented at means  $\pm$  s.e.m. Significant differences are indicated by different letters, except for air exposure where an asterisk denotes difference from control (*P*<0.05).



Figure 2.5: Effect of a hypercarbic-induced respiratory acidosis in *Acipenser transmontanus* (white sturgeon) on blood and tissue acid-base status following a 6 h exposure to 1.5 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>. Blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] are presented on a pH-HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> plot; fish were sampled either prior to (control;  $\bigcirc$ ) or at the end of the exposure ( $\bullet$ ) (a). Dashed line indicates the blood non-bicarbonate buffer line (-11.9 mM HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> pH unit<sup>-1</sup>) for *A. transmontanus* as determined by Baker et al. (2009a). Intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) of red blood cells (RBC), heart, liver, brain and white muscle (WM) when sampled either prior to (control; open bar) or at the end of the exposure (e-0.05) for pH<sub>e</sub>, plasma HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> and pH<sub>i</sub>, as determined by Baker et al. (2009a), are indicated by uppercase letters, Greek letters and asterisks, respectively.

Treatment	Post-exposure	Hematocrit	Plasma [Cl <sup>-</sup> ]	Plasma [lactate]
	time (min)	(%)	(mM)	(mM)
Control		27±0.5	125±4	2.9±0.4
Hyperoxia	0	29±1*	129±1	4.6±0.5*
Exercise	15	35±1*	140±5*	6.2±0.5*
	120	33±1*	130±1	6.2±0.5*
Anoxia	15	29±1	133±5	4.1±0.2*
	120	29±1	125±2	3.8±0.3
Air exposure	15	26±2	129±3	5.0±0.3*

 Table 2.1: Effect of various treatments inducing an acidosis on hematocrit, plasma [Cl<sup>-</sup>] and
 [lactate] in Acipenser transmontanus (white sturgeon).

Values are indicated as means  $\pm$  s.e.m., N=8; significant differences from control are indicated by an asterisk (*P*<0.05).

# **Chapter 3: Preferential Intracellular pH Regulation May Represent a Common Strategy of Acid-Base Regulation Amongst CO<sub>2</sub> Tolerant Fishes**

# 3.1 Introduction

Large transient increases in CO<sub>2</sub> (hypercarbia) are common in many aquatic environments and pose challenges for acid-base regulation in fishes (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Hasler et al., 2016; McNeil and Sasse, 2016; Shartau and Brauner, 2014). When subjected to acute hypercarbia, fishes will experience an increase in blood PCO<sub>2</sub> as CO<sub>2</sub> diffuses and equilibrates across the gills, which leads to a reduction in blood and extracellular pH (pH<sub>e</sub>), referred to as a respiratory acidosis. The most common response observed in fishes [e.g. Eptatretus stoutii (Pacific hagfish) (Baker et al., 2015), Scyliorhinus stellaris (dogfish) (Heisler et al., 1988), Gadus morhua (Atlantic cod) (Larsen et al., 1997), Oncorhynchus mykiss (rainbow trout) (Hobe et al., 1984), Conger *conger* (conger eel) (Toews et al., 1983)] is that  $pH_e$  is compensated by a net increase in plasma  $[HCO_3]$  in exchange for Cl<sup>-</sup>, with the gills playing the primary role in compensation (Brauner and Baker, 2009). Depending on the severity of the acidoses and the ionic composition of the water (Larsen and Jensen, 1997), complete pH<sub>e</sub> compensation typically occurs within 24-72 h. Putative limits on the elevation in plasma  $[HCO_3]$  appear to prevent complete pH<sub>e</sub> compensation during exposure to acute PCO<sub>2</sub> >2 kPa (Baker et al., 2015; Brauner and Baker, 2009; Heisler, 1984). Changes in pH<sub>e</sub> are often associated with qualitatively similar changes in intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) as the two are typically coupled, referred to as 'coupled pH regulation'; thus, recovery of pH<sub>e</sub> is important for pH<sub>i</sub> recovery (Shartau et al., 2016a). Failure to maintain acid-base homeostasis will negatively impact fitness in environments subject to severe acute hypercarbia as deviations from normal physiological pH values can affect molecular charge, altering the structure and function of biological macromolecules, and, ultimately, reducing whole-animal performance (e.g. reduce heart and skeletal muscle contractility,

alter metabolic pathways, and disrupt cellular signalling and processes such as volume regulation) (Boron, 2004; Occhipinti and Boron, 2015; Putnam and Roos, 1997).

Many of the world's freshwater fishes inhabit hypercarbia-prone environments. Globally, the average  $PCO_2$  of stream and river systems is ~0.3 kPa (*ca.* 3100 µatm), about 8-fold above current atmospheric levels (Raymond et al., 2013); some tropical freshwater lakes and rivers may experience a range of CO<sub>2</sub> tensions up to ~2 kPa (20,249 μatm) (Cole et al., 1994) and ~5.5 kPa (54,270 μatm) (de Fátima F L Rasera et al., 2013), respectively. In many aquatic systems, there may be localized point sources for high  $PCO_2$  which may further increase  $PCO_2$  due to vegetative covering and respiration of aquatic life (Hasler et al., 2016); in the Amazon River basin PCO<sub>2</sub> may reach 8 kPa (Furch and Junk, 1997; Heisler, 1984) and the presence of CO<sub>2</sub> vents could produce  $PCO_2 > 50$  kPa (Sorey et al., 2000). Within manmade aquatic systems,  $PCO_2$  can easily rise beyond 2-4 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> within recirculating aquaculture systems and aquaculture ponds (Crocker and Cech, 1996; Damsgaard et al., 2015). Additionally, modifications to river systems via creation of dams have the potential to create environments prone to experiencing hypercarbia (de Faria et al., 2015). There is also interest in controlling movement of invasive fish species using  $CO_2$  as a barrier by increasing regional  $PCO_2$ levels to as high as ~5-11 kPa (100-200 mg/L) (Dennis et al., 2016; Kates et al., 2012; Tierney, 2016). In the marine environment, there are natural  $CO_2$  seeps at some locations which create localized hypercarbia (Basso et al., 2015; Melzner et al., 2009), thus affecting marine life (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Hawkins, 2004; Lackner, 2003). There is a great variation in water PCO<sub>2</sub> worldwide that species have adapted to, or have to deal with due to anthropogenic influences, and often PCO<sub>2</sub> exceeds the putative limits for pH<sub>e</sub> regulation. However, relatively little is known about how fish tolerate and compensate for these high  $CO_2$  levels.

Some groups of fishes may be especially well adapted to severe hypercarbia as evident in tropical freshwater environments which have a high diversity of species. Tropical environments contain 56% of watersheds with high fish species diversity (Val et al., 2005), and this is exemplified by the species rich Rio Negro, an acidic ion-poor Amazon River tributary, that contains over 1000 species (Gonzalez et al., 2017). A number of basal euteleostom fishes also reside in hypercarbic-prone habitats, with the majority being bimodal breathers, which may increase the likelihood of experiencing a respiratory acidosis (Shartau and Brauner, 2014). This suggests many fishes are well adapted to responding to hypercarbia; indeed, Regan et al. (2016) observed that brain function in *Pangasianodon hypophthalmus* (striped catfish), a tropical bimodal breather, is adapted for the hypercarbic waters of the Mekong River and is disrupted during exposure to normocapnia. Coupled pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may be constrained in high CO<sub>2</sub> environments, yet little is known about how fishes tolerate and survive severe acute hypercarbia.

In the few fishes studied to date that tolerate hypercarbia well above 2 kPa  $PCO_2$ , it appears tolerance is associated with the ability to completely regulate pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, brain, liver and muscle, despite a large, often uncompensated, reduction in  $pH_e$ (preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation) (Shartau et al., 2016a). Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has been demonstrated in Synbranchus marmoratus (marbled swamp eel) (Heisler, 1982), Pterygoplichthys pardalis (armoured catfish) (Brauner et al., 2004) and Acipenser transmontanus (white sturgeon) (Baker et al., 2009a) exposed to PCO<sub>2</sub> ranging from 3-6 kPa. This strategy of acid-base regulation, at least in A. transmontanus, appears to provide near instantaneous pHi regulation [(Baker, 2010); reviewed in (Shartau et al., 2016a)] and does not exert a whole animal metabolic cost (Baker and Brauner, 2012). In P. pardalis, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a general strategy of pH regulation, used during both respiratory and metabolic acid-base challenges (Harter et al., 2014); however, in A. *transmontanus*, pH protection may be tissue specific during metabolic acidoses (Shartau et al., 2017a). It has been previously hypothesized that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation confers exceptional CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance in fishes, as it may be the strategy by which they are able to cope with a severe acute respiratory acidosis. Protection of tissue pH during acidoses is important as large pH<sub>i</sub> reduction in O. mykiss muscle following exhaustive exercise is believed to be responsible for increased mortality following exercise (Wood et al., 1983). Lower heart  $pH_i$  is associated with reduced heart contractibility, and thus, cardiac performance may be reduced leading to diminished O<sub>2</sub> delivery (Vaughan-Jones et al., 2009). A reduction in brain  $pH_i$  due to hypercarbia has an anesthetic affect, causing a loss of equilibrium which may lead to mortality (Yoshikawa et al., 1994). By preferentially regulating pH<sub>i</sub> during a hypercarbic-induced respiratory acidosis, the above fishes may

avoid these damaging affects and thus, inhabit and/or travel through environments experiencing short-term severe hypercarbia. As few fish species have been shown to preferentially regulate  $pH_i$  (Shartau et al., 2016a), it remains unclear if this strategy is widely used, or is confined to a select few basal actinopterygian and air breathing fishes (Shartau and Brauner, 2014); that few species are known to use this pattern of acid-base regulation is likely a result of few studies exposing fishes to severe hypercarbia while simultaneously measuring  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$ .

We hypothesize that CO<sub>2</sub> tolerant fishes utilize preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and that fishes from a number of different families and orders use this strategy of acid-base regulation. The main objective of this study was to conduct a survey of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance in a group of phylogenically diverse fishes that included 20 fishes originating from three continents (North America, South America and Africa), representing 11 orders, and range from basal vertebrates (e.g. lamprey) to derived actinopterygians (e.g. tilapia). We first devised a CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay to assess acute CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance (Series I). Next, acid-base response of various fish species were examined using terminal pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> sampling following severe acute hypercarbia ranging from 1.5-6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, depending on their CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance (Series II). Finally, Series III used the CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay to indirectly determine preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in a number of other fish species to gain a broader understanding of the phylogenetic distribution of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Together, these objectives provide the most comprehensive examination of acid-base regulation during acute hypercarbia in fishes conducted to date.

#### 3.2 Methodology

#### 3.2.1 Animal acquisition and holding

In this study, 20 species of fish were used and experiments were conducted as follows. From September 2012 to November 2013 measurements were made on the following species at the University of British Columbia, Vancouver, BC, Canada): *Oncorhynchus mykiss* (rainbow trout) (250-400g) from Miracle Springs Inc. (Mission, BC, Canada); *Entosphenus tridentatus* (Pacific lamprey) (~200g) caught Fall 2013 on the

Nechako river near Prince George, BC, Canada; *Oncorhynchus kisutch* (coho salmon) (~100g) UBC aquaculture facility (Vancouver, BC, Canada); *Oreochromis niloticus* X *mossambicus* X *hornorum* (tilapia hybrid) (~300-400g) from Redfish Ranch (Courtenay, BC, Canada). Experiments with *Acipenser transmontanus* (white sturgeon) (~200g) were conducted at the International Centre for Sturgeon Studies, Vancouver Island University, Nanaimo, BC, Canada using fish reared in their facility.

Experiments were conducted at the Instituto Nacional de Pesquisas da Amazônia/INPA (Manaus, AM, Brazil) with fish caught in the Rio Negro near Manaus and transferred to a holding facility at INPA in 2008: *Hoplosternum littorale* (tamoata), *Brycon amazonicus* (matrinxa), *Colossoma macropomum* (tambaqui) and *Astronotus ocellatus* (oscar). In 2013 the following species were caught from the wild and investigated at INPA: *Potamotrygon sp.* (freshwater ray) (~50-80g), *Lepidosiren paradoxa* (South American lungfish) ~ 300-1500g, *Synbranchus marmoratus* (marbled swamp eel) ~ 50-150g, *Electrophorus electricus* (electric eel). The following fish were obtained from local fish farms and transferred to facilities at INPA, *Arapaima gigas* ~ 75-100g, *C. macropomum, Astronotus ocellatus* (oscar), and *Pterygoplichthys pardalis* (armoured catfish) ~100g.

Experiments with the following farm reared species were conducted at the South Farm Aquaculture research facility at Mississippi State University (Starkville, MS, USA) in March 2013: *Polyodon spathula* (American paddlefish) ~ 150-400g, *Atractosteus spatula* (alligator gar) ~ 400-1000g, *Ictalurus punctatus* (channel catfish) ~ 100 – 200g, *Ictalurus punctatus* X *I. furcatus* (channel X blue catfish) ~ 100 – 200g. Experiments with the following species were conducted at the University of North Texas (Denton, TX, USA) with fish caught from nearby lakes/rivers in November 2012: *Lepisosteus oculatus* (spotted gar) ~ 300-700g, and *I. punctatus* ~ 50-200g.

Typically, animals were kept for at least 2 weeks in appropriate tanks under standard conditions of food, temperature and natural photoperiod before experiments; however, some fish were wild caught and only held for 72 h due to constraints on animal housing. Fish were not fed at least 48 h before experiments.

### 3.2.2 Series I: CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay

To determine the optimal rate of  $CO_2$  increase for assessing  $CO_2$  tolerance, fish species that are known to use different acid-base regulatory strategies in response to hypercarbia were used, *O. mykiss* (coupled pH regulation) and *A. transmontanus* (preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation) (Shartau et al., 2016a). Fish were randomly selected from the holding tank and placed in individual black plexi-glass boxes (24 L) with aeration in a recirculating system (flow rate ~3 L min<sup>-1</sup> per box, 15 °C; total water volume of system ~320 L) overnight prior to experiments. Fish were then exposed to progressively increasing levels of hypercarbia at a rate of 1, 2 or 4 kPa  $PCO_2$  h<sup>-1</sup>. Water  $PCO_2$  was monitored to ensure  $PCO_2$  increased at the desired rate for the duration of exposure using a thermostated (15 °C) Radiometer  $PCO_2$  electrode (E5036) (output, Radiometer PHM 73). Fish were continuously observed for loss of equilibrium (LOE), which was used as the end point to indicate their  $CO_2$  tolerance. LOE was defined as the inability to maintain dorsoventral orientation. Once LOE was reached, fish were immediately removed from the box and placed in a normocarbic, normoxic recovery tank; fish were monitored for at least 48 h after hypercarbia exposure and there were no mortalities.

#### 3.2.3 Series II: Strategy of acid-base balance during severe acute hypercarbia

The strategy of acid-base regulation used during severe acute hypercarbia in fishes was determined by first subjecting them to the CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay at a rate of 2 kPa  $PCO_2$  h<sup>-1</sup>, as was previously determined to be a suitable rate in Series I. The assay was targeted to ensure fish would tolerate one of three desired  $PCO_2$  test exposures (1.5, 3 or 6 kPa). The highest CO<sub>2</sub> tension fish could tolerate was used in order to observe pH<sub>i</sub> during maximal pH<sub>e</sub> depression; as pH<sub>i</sub> only changes by approximately 1/3 of pH<sub>e</sub> in coupled pH regulators, (due to a lower starting pH<sub>i</sub> value and greater tissue buffer value) larger reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> allow for a more accurate determination of whether fishes preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub>. Once the we determined the CO<sub>2</sub> tension that fish species of interest could tolerate, we performed the following experiment to assess whether they utilize either coupled pH regulation or preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation.

Fish were acclimated individually for 24 h in black plexi-glass boxes in the system described above; this period is sufficient to allow recovery from handling stress in

sturgeon (Baker et al., 2005b; Barton et al., 2000). Normocarbic fish were terminally sampled immediately (see below) following this acclimation period (control group). Other fish were then exposed to 3 h hypercarbia at either 1.5, 3 or 6 kPa  $PCO_2$ , depending on the fish species. We also examined the response of an extremely hypercarbia tolerant species (based on series I), *C. macropomum*, to more severe hypercarbia of 20 kPa  $PCO_2$  as we were interested if  $CO_2$  tolerance at this high  $CO_2$  tensions is associated with preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as is the case at lower, but still severe hypercarbia levels.

The 3 h time point was chosen to sample fish in Series II because at this time  $pH_i$ is typically maximally reduced and  $pH_i$  compensation is more rapid than  $pH_e$ compensation. Furthermore, this provides sufficient time for CO<sub>2</sub> to increase in all tissues resulting in  $pH_i$  depression if fish are coupled pH regulators or no change in  $pH_i$  if they are preferential  $pH_i$  regulators (Shartau et al., 2016a). Hypercarbia was achieved by bubbling a mixing tank with preset rates of air and 100% CO<sub>2</sub> using Sierra Instruments mass flow controllers. Water *P*CO<sub>2</sub> was measured with a *P*CO<sub>2</sub> electrode to confirm target CO<sub>2</sub> tensions; water O<sub>2</sub> levels remained >80% saturation.

At the time of sampling, each box was isolated from the recirculation system and anesthetic was added to the water (MS-222 0.3 g/L buffered with NaHCO<sub>3</sub>) while hypercarbic gas bubbling was maintained to minimize changes in blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> and avoid hypoxemia due to reduced ventilation. Once ventilation ceased (<3 min), each fish was turned ventral side up, while gills remained submerged in aerated water and blood (~2-3 mL) was drawn from the caudal vein into a lithium-heparin (1 g L<sup>-1</sup>) rinsed syringe (3 mL syringe, 23 G1<sup>1</sup>/<sub>4</sub> needle) and placed on ice. Following this procedure, fish were killed via cephalic concussion and cervical dislocation and tissues (0.5-1.0 g) were removed within 2-3 min, wrapped in aluminum foil and immediately flash frozen in liquid N<sub>2</sub>. Tissues were sampled in the following order: heart (gently squeezed and patted dry to remove any excess blood), liver, dorsal white muscle (left side, just posterior of the dorsal fin; skin and red muscle removed), and brain; tissues were stored longer term at -80 °C. Blood was divided into two aliquots. Blood pH and hematocrit (Hct) were measured from one aliquot; the other aliquot was centrifuged (3 min at 10,000 rpm) and plasma was removed for measurement of total CO<sub>2</sub> (TCO<sub>2</sub>) and [CI<sup>-</sup>].

Blood pH was measured using a Radiometer PHM 84 (Copenhagen, Denmark) connected to a thermostated Radiometer Analytical SAS pH electrode (GK2401C, Cedex, France). RBC pH<sub>i</sub> was measured using the freeze-thaw method as described by Zeidler and Kim (Zeidler and Kim, 1977). Tissue pH<sub>i</sub> was measured using the metabolic inhibitor tissue homogenate method (MITH; see Appendix for detailed description of this method) (Portner et al., 1990) and validated for use in fish by Baker et al. (2009b). Plasma TCO<sub>2</sub> was measured using a total CO<sub>2</sub> analyzer (Corning model 965 Analyzer); the remaining plasma was used to measure [Cl<sup>-</sup>] ions (HBI model 4425000; digital chloridometer). Plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] and *P*CO<sub>2</sub> were calculated using TCO<sub>2</sub> and pH values described by Brauner et al. (2004). CO<sub>2</sub> solubility coefficient and the logarithmic acid dissociation constant (pK<sup>2</sup>) for plasma were determined from Boutilier et al. (1984).

#### 3.2.4 Series III: CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance to infer pattern of pH regulation

To conduct a more rapid and non-lethal assessment of pH regulation in fishes, we used the CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay to determine CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance in various species, as determined by point of LOE. Fish were placed individually in boxes, allowed to acclimate 24 h and then exposed to a target rate of increase of 2 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> h<sup>-1</sup> until LOE was reached or in the case of *E. tridentatus*, *Potamotrygon sp.*, *P. pardalis* and *S. marmoratus* when these fishes became unresponsive to gentle prodding with a plastic stick. As in Series I, once LOE was reached, fish were removed and allowed to recover. Fishes reaching LOE >8 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> are considered to be preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulators as *O. mykiss* did not tolerate *P*CO<sub>2</sub> beyond this tension at any other rates of increase (Fig. 3.1), and thus suggests fish tolerant to CO<sub>2</sub> tensions greater than this are preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulators.

#### 3.2.5 Calculations and statistical analysis

All values are expressed as means  $\pm$  s.e.m. throughout. Data were compared by Welch's t-test or where multiple treatments were evaluated, data were analyzed by analysis of variance (ANOVA), followed by Tukey's post hoc test. If the data did not meet the assumptions of normality (Shapiro-Wilk normality test) or equal variance (Bartlett's test), a Kruskal-Walis test followed by Dunn's multiple comparison test was used (P<0.05). GraphPad Prism (v.5) was used for statistical analyses and preparation of figures.

# 3.3 Results

# 3.3.1 Series I: Development of a CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay

To determine a rate of CO<sub>2</sub> increase to assess acute CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance, *O. mykiss* and *A. transmontanus* were exposed to progressively increasing levels of hypercarbia at a rate of 1, 2 or 4 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> h<sup>-1</sup>. The mean *P*CO<sub>2</sub> at which LOE occurred in rainbow trout was  $5.5 \pm 0.3$ ,  $4.8 \pm 0.3$  and  $2.7 \pm 0.2$  kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> at rates of 1, 2 and 4 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> h<sup>-1</sup>, respectively, while that in *A. transmontanus* was  $22.1 \pm 2.2$ ,  $14.6 \pm 2.3$  and  $6.3 \pm 1.8$  kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, respectively (Fig. 3.1). Within species, the *P*CO<sub>2</sub> LOE at 4 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> h<sup>-1</sup> was lower relative to the other rates (P<0.01); there was no difference between 1 and 2 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> h<sup>-1</sup>. Comparison between species at the different rates of *P*CO<sub>2</sub> increase indicated that *A. transmontanus* had a higher *P*CO<sub>2</sub> LOE at 1 and 2, but not 4 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> h<sup>-1</sup> (P<0.01). No mortalities occurred in the 72 h following LOE in fish allowed to recover in normocarbia.

# 3.3.2 Series II: Survey of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

Acute hypercarbia exposure to 1.5 kPa  $PCO_2$  in P. spathula, 4 kPa  $PCO_2$  in H. littorale, B. amazonicus, C. macropomum and A. ocellatus, and 6 kPa  $PCO_2$  in L. oculatus, A. spatula, I. punctatus, and Oreochromis sp. reduced both pH<sub>e</sub> and RBC pH<sub>i</sub> as expected; the sole exception was A. ocellatus RBC where there was limited sample size (n=2). In contrast, pH<sub>i</sub> increased in the heart of L. oculatus, H. littorale, B. amazonicus, C. macropomum and A. ocellatus (P<0.05), A. spatula liver, I. punctatus brain and Oreochromis sp. white muscle (Fig. 3.2); no other statistically significant changes were observed in other tissues. Similarly, exposure of C. macropomum to 20 kPa  $PCO_2$ severely reduced pH<sub>e</sub> from 7.729 ± 0.03 to 6.896 ± 0.024 pH units. Red blood cell (RBC) and white muscle pH<sub>i</sub> was reduced but there are no statistically significant changes in heart, liver or brain  $pH_i$  (Fig. 3.2G). Results in all of these fish species are consistent with the capacity for preferential  $pH_i$  regulation (Shartau et al., 2016a).

Exposure of *O. mykiss* to 3 kPa  $PCO_2$  also resulted in the expected reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> and RBC pH<sub>i</sub>. In line with those changes, pH<sub>i</sub> was reduced in heart, liver, brain, and white muscle (Fig. 3.2F); these results are in agreement with previous studies and consistent with use of coupled pH regulation (Shartau et al., 2016a).

Where measured, there were no significant changes in plasma Cl<sup>-</sup>, or osmolarity in any fishes. Only *O. mykiss* experienced an increase in hematocrit during exposure to 1.5 and 3 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> while *P. spathula* exhibited a reduction (Table 3.1).

# 3.3.3 Series III: CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance

Using the Series I CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay at a rate of 2 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> h<sup>-1</sup>, the mean *P*CO<sub>2</sub> at which LOE occurred were determined for the following species: *E. tridentatus* - 14.6 ± 0.4 kPa, *Potamotrygon sp.* 11.1 ± 0.2 kPa, *P. spathula* 2.7 ± 0.5 kPa, *A. transmontanus* 14.5 ± 2.3 kPa, *A. gigas* 24.4 ± 1.0 kPa, *I. punctatus* 8.4 ± 0.1 kPa, *I. punctatus* X *I. furcatus* 7.4 ± 0.2 kPa, *P. pardalis* 14.0 ± 0.9 kPa, *O. mykiss* 4.8 ± 0.3 kPa, *O. kisutch* 5.5 ± 0.7 kPa, *A. ocellatus* 13.9 ± 0.6 kPa, and *Oreochromis sp.* 12.6 ± 0.5 kPa (Table 3.2). Several fish species were highly CO<sub>2</sub> tolerant and their tolerance exceeded our ability to measure CO<sub>2</sub> which was limited to 26.7 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> (200 torr *P*CO<sub>2</sub>); these fishes did not reach LOE at a rate of 2 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> h<sup>-1</sup>: *S. marmoratus*, *L. paradoxa*, *C. macropomum*, *E. electricus* (n=2). Immediately following LOE, fish were transferred to normocarbic waters and no mortalities were observed in the subsequent 48 h of recovery.

#### 3.4 Discussion

Our objective was to investigate the prevalence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in phylogenically diverse fishes to understand how they maintain acid-base homeostasis during severe acute hypercarbia. We show that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is used by fishes tolerant of severe acute hypercarbia, and that it is present in species from numerous phylogenetic orders; thus, likely representing a general strategy of acid-base regulation amongst fishes (Fig. 3.3). These results support our hypothesis that CO<sub>2</sub> tolerant fishes use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. However, we also show that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is not sufficient to confer CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance (Fig. 3.3; Table 3.2) as was hypothesized by Brauner and Baker (2009). This study demonstrates that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may be an important and widespread trait allowing fishes to tolerate, and thus survive hypercarbia in diverse aquatic environments.

#### 3.4.1 Use of CO<sub>2</sub> assay for tolerance to acute hypercarbia

Previous studies examining CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance have generally exposed fishes to a certain PCO<sub>2</sub> and recorded the time at which behaviour changes or LOE is achieved (Hasler et al., 2017; Hayashi et al., 2004; Kates et al., 2012); consequently, these methodologies do not provide an estimate as to the maximal acute PCO<sub>2</sub> fish can tolerate, nor do they suggest an appropriate rate of CO<sub>2</sub> increase to investigate hypercarbia tolerance. This study shows that 1 and 2 kPa  $PCO_2$  h<sup>-1</sup> may provide the best estimate of acute CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance as there was no difference in the PCO<sub>2</sub> at which LOE were reached, whereas at 4 kPa  $PCO_2$  h<sup>-1</sup>, the LOE  $PCO_2$  was significantly lower (Fig. 3.1). It is uncertain why the faster rate of PCO<sub>2</sub> increase resulted in a lower LOE PCO<sub>2</sub> but could be a consequence of the rapid  $CO_2$  induced acidification outpacing the cellular defenses to mitigate the acidosis. Additionally, the lack of difference between O. mykiss and A. *transmontanus* LOE  $PCO_2$  at 4 kPa  $PCO_2$  h<sup>-1</sup> prevents differentiating between strategies of acid-base regulation. Where multiple runs of this assay were conducted using different individuals (L. oculatus, P. spathula, I. punctatus; limited fish numbers precluded us from repeating the  $CO_2$  tolerance assay in all species), we observed that the  $PCO_2$  at which LOE occurs is consistent (Table 1). Recently, Hasler et al. (2017) demonstrated that hypercarbia tolerance is a repeatable, and likely a heritable, trait within individuals of Micropterus salmoides (largemouth bass).

Using this  $CO_2$  tolerance assay as an indicator of acute tolerance may not accurately reflect natural environmental exposures, nor is it likely to indicate the maximal capacity of fishes to compensate for gradual, chronically induced hypercarbia. However, the rapid acute  $CO_2$  exposure in this assay does provide an approximation of fishes' ability to protect critical tissues against rapid acidification, which is thought to be the
cause of LOE (Yoshikawa et al., 1994), and we propose indicates the presence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation which in the sturgeon heart has been shown to be virtually instantaneous during CO<sub>2</sub> exposure [Baker, 2010, reviewed in (Shartau et al., 2016a)]. In fishes where pH<sub>i</sub> was measured along with CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance, it was observed that in those that were more tolerant of hypercarbia than O. mykiss (which use coupled pH regulation), are also preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulators. In addition to A. transmontanus, A. spatula, L. oculatus, I. punctatus, P. pardalis, A. ocellatus, Oreochromis sp., S. marmoratus, C. *macropomum* are CO<sub>2</sub> tolerant as indicated by the CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay developed here and direct pH measurements have confirmed their ability for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during severe acute hypercarbia. Therefore, CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance, as demonstrated in this assay, may provide an assessment regarding the capacity for fishes to protect pH<sub>i</sub>, and thus, use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. The association between high CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance and preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was corroborated with pH measurements in a number of species; however, the relationship between low  $CO_2$  tolerance and coupled pH regulation only occurred in O. mykiss, and thus should be investigated more thoroughly among other coupled pH regulators.

#### 3.4.2 Acid-base regulation during hypercarbia

Studies measuring acid-base status in fishes exposed to acute hypercarbia have typically observed concurrent pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> reductions (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau et al., 2016a). However, most of these studies have investigated fish exposed <2 kPa  $PCO_2$ , and those subjecting fishes to more severe hypercarbia have not typically investigated how they maintain acid-base homeostasis (Shartau et al., 2016a). Fishes dependent on coupled pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> regulation appear to be limited to compensating pH<sub>e</sub> at  $PCO_2 <2$  kPa due to putative limits on plasma HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> [the so-called "HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> concentration threshold" (Heisler, 1984)], which may be associated with preventing hypochloremia, as pH<sub>e</sub> compensation is associated with a net increase in plasma HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> in equimolar exchange for plasma Cl<sup>-</sup> (Baker et al., 2015; Brauner and Baker, 2009; Heisler, 1984). As many fishes inhabit environments where CO<sub>2</sub> may greatly exceed 2 kPa  $PCO_2$ and likely experience large, frequent oscillations in CO<sub>2</sub> (Furch and Junk, 1997; Gonzalez et al., 2017; Heisler, 1984; Val et al., 2005), the use of coupled pH regulation is likely insufficient for survival in these habitats, particularly in species rich regions such as the Amazon and Mekong river basins. In contrast preferential  $pH_i$  regulation appears to offer an advantageous strategy of acid-base regulation during acute CO<sub>2</sub> exposure, allowing fishes to protect  $pH_i$  against at least  $PCO_2 > 15$  kPa (Fig. 3.2G) in at least one species, which is quite remarkable.

Survival during severe acute acidoses may depend on protecting  $pH_i$ , not  $pH_e$  as mortality in marine fishes following exposure to severe acute hypercarbia is believed to be due reduced heart  $pH_i$  (Hayashi et al., 2004). In the latter,  $pH_i$  was not measured, but it was suggested O<sub>2</sub> supply was impaired as cardiac output dropped due to reduced cardiac contractility stemming from reduced cardiac pH (Vandenberg et al., 1994). Similarly, reduced brain pH may be responsible for the anesthetic effect in common carp *Cyprinus* carpio causing them to lose equilibrium (Yoshikawa et al., 1994). During an exerciseinduced metabolic acidosis, reduced muscle pH was hypothesized to be the cause of postexercise mortality in O. mykiss (Wood et al., 1983). The capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in those fishes may be insufficient to protect against acidoses, thus leading to deleterious changes in pH<sub>i</sub> that ultimately affect whole animal performance (see introduction). Irrespective of their ability to compensate pH<sub>e</sub>, the cellular dysfunction accompanied by pH<sub>i</sub> reduction renders these fishes sensitive to severe acid-base challenges. In contrast, species maintaining pH<sub>i</sub> during these acid-base challenges, particularly in critical tissues such as the heart, appear to be resilient to a range of respiratory and metabolic acidoses. For example, P. pardalis (Harter et al., 2014) and A. transmontanus (Shartau et al., 2017a) tolerate a range of acidoses which may be largely due to their capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Tolerance of severe acute hypercarbia in this study is likely due to the exceptional capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and is best exemplified in this study by pH<sub>i</sub> protection of heart and brain in C. macropomum during exposure to 15 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> (Fig. 3.2G).

#### 3.4.3 Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in fishes

Measurements of  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$  in Series II reveals several species preferentially regulate  $pH_i$  during acute severe hypercarbia and the CO<sub>2</sub> assay suggests several other species also may have this ability. Use of the CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay without pH measurements may not consistently infer the strategy of acid-base regulation if fish are sensitive to  $CO_2$  as preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation alone does not appear sufficient to confer  $CO_2$  tolerance; this is demonstrated in *P. spathula* which fully protected pH<sub>i</sub> despite having a relatively low  $CO_2$  tolerance (2.7±0.5 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>) (Fig. 3.2A; Table 3.2). The basis for this low tolerance in *P. spathula* is uncertain, although it may be due, in part, to their high P<sub>50</sub> and high MO<sub>2</sub> (Aboagye and Allen, 2014; Aboagye and Allen, 2017); thus, reductions in Hb-O<sub>2</sub> affinity due to Bohr/Root effects may hinder O<sub>2</sub> uptake and lead paddlefish to experience hypoxemia despite complete water O<sub>2</sub> saturation.

A greater degree of certainty is possible regarding the strategy of pH regulation when fishes are tolerant to high  $CO_2$  as the [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] threshold putatively confers a physiological limit to pH<sub>e</sub> regulation; consequently, fishes more tolerant than O. mvkiss, where this limit has been demonstrated numerous times, are most likely to use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. The association between high CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance and preferential  $pH_i$  regulation is reinforced by the now numerous examples of highly CO<sub>2</sub> tolerant fishes using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Use of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is made all the more likely by the putative ionoregulatory disturbances that would occur if pHe was compensated during severe hypercarbia. For example, complete pH<sub>e</sub> compensation in C. *macropomum* with blood  $PCO_2$  of 15 kPa would require a plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] of ca. 250 mM; thus, complete pH<sub>e</sub> compensation is not possible due to the ensuing changes in plasma osmolarity and ion balance that would occur. Even if compensation was desirable, typical freshwater teleost osmolarity is approximately 262-274 mM and plasma [Cl] is 125-132 mM (Table 3.1) (Edwards and Marshall, 2013); consequently, there is insufficient Cl<sup>-</sup> to exchange for HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>, and even partial compensation would require a near total change in plasma ionic composition. Use of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation does not preclude pH<sub>e</sub> compensation during hypercarbia exposure in all fishes as *H. littorale*, *B.* Amazonicus, C. macropomum, and A. ocellatus, all exhibited complete or partial pHe compensation following 24 h hypercarbia exposure (data not shown). This is different than the response observed in *P. pardalis* which do not compensate pH<sub>e</sub> following 96 h exposure to 4 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> (Brauner et al., 2004), yet is similar to the *P. hypophthalmus* in the Mekong which compensate  $pH_e$  by 48 h at *ca*. 4 kPa  $PCO_2$  (Damsgaard et al., 2015) while preferentially regulating pH<sub>i</sub> (R.B.S., M. Sackville, C. Damsgaard, L.M. Phuong,

M. Hvas, T. Wang, M. Bayley, D.T.T. Huong, N.T. Phuong, and C.J.B., unpublished observations). Compensation of  $pH_e$  by these fishes generally conforms to the limits of the putative [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] threshold and this may indicate a preference to preserve whole animal acid-base homeostasis when possible.

Previously, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation had only been identified in three fishes (Baker et al., 2009a; Brauner et al., 2004; Heisler, 1982); we now show, via direct and indirect measurements, that another 15 species use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during severe acute hypercarbia (Fig. 3.3). That preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a rare pattern of acid-base regulation among vertebrates (Brauner et al., 2004) is unlikely, but rather it may be an ubiquitous strategy given the putative limits to pH<sub>e</sub> regulation and the species richness in hypercarbic habitats. When previous studies (Baker et al., 2009a; Brauner et al., 2004; Heisler, 1982), unpublished observations [*Amia calva*, reviewed in (Brauner and Baker, 2009) and *P. hypophthalmus*, reviewed in (Shartau et al., 2016a)] and this study, are considered, there are 16 fish species likely to use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, representing 9 euteleostomi fish orders, as well as an elasmobranch and agnathans (Fig. 3.3); suggesting preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is both a widely distributed and widely used strategy of acid-base regulation.

## 3.4.4 Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation: a strategy for expansion into hypercarbic environments?

The effect of hypercarbia in the context of anthropogenic climate change on fishes has been well studied; however, these current and future  $PCO_2$  increases are greatly surpassed by existing natural  $CO_2$  variations in many aquatic systems. The severe hypercarbic conditions in many environments pose challenges to acid-base regulation, however, this still remains an area ripe for investigation. Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation likely represents a key adaptation for survival in high  $CO_2$  environments as an inability to protect pH<sub>i</sub> is likely the proximate cause of mortality during, and following severe acidoses (Hayashi et al., 2004; Shartau et al., 2017a; Wood et al., 1983; Yoshikawa et al., 1994). Hypercarbia tolerance may have been an important selective pressure for niche expansion in aquatic habitats, particularly in the tropics, which may partially explain the tremendous species richness seen in these regions (e.g. Amazon and Mekong rivers); additionally, hypercarbia, along with aquatic hypoxia, may have been a selective pressure for the evolution of air breathing (Ultsch, 1987; Ultsch, 1996). Aerial respiration in fishes typically increases blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> as (1) hypoxic waters are often simultaneously hypercarbic, and (2) CO<sub>2</sub> release still largely occurs at the gills, and gill ventilation is typically reduced during air breathing (Shartau and Brauner, 2014); thus, CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance conferred by preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may have been instrumental for the evolution of air breathing (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau and Brauner, 2014).

In summary, this study is the most comprehensive investigation to date examining how fishes respond to severe acute respiratory acidoses. Here, 20 fishes originating from three continents (North America, South America and Africa), representing 11 orders, which include 17 families and 20 genera (Betancur-R et al., 2013), are investigated for their response to hypercarbia; these species range from basal vertebrates (e.g. lamprey) to derived actinopterygians (e.g. tilapia). This study demonstrates that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a widely used strategy to survive and tolerate CO<sub>2</sub> tensions ranging from 3-20 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>. As acid-base regulation is intimately associated with proper physiological functioning and ultimately survival, understanding how fishes (and vertebrates) co-opted preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation to thrive in challenging environments may provide insight into key evolutionary transitions in vertebrates, such as the evolution of air breathing and the transition from water to land.



Figure 3.1 Bar plot of CO<sub>2</sub> tensions at loss of equilibrium in *Oncorhynchus mykiss* (open bars) and *Acipenser transmontanus* (grey bars) when subjected to a progressive increase in *P*CO<sub>2</sub> at 1, 2 or 4 kPa h<sup>-1</sup>. Mean  $\pm$  s.em. Significant differences due to rate of CO<sub>2</sub> increase within species are indicated by letters that differ (uppercase – *O. mykiss*; lowercase – *A. transmontanus*) (P<0.05). Differences between *O. mykiss* and *A. transmontanus*, which use coupled pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> and preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, respectively, at each rate of CO<sub>2</sub> increase are indicated by an asterisk (P<0.05).









**Figure 3.2:** Effect of 3 h exposure to elevated CO<sub>2</sub> on blood and tissue acid-base status in 10 different fish species. The relationship between extracellular pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and intracellular tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) for each species is shown on two panels. Red blood cell (RBC) pH<sub>i</sub> is plotted separately in the first panel for each species (i) as it is expected to be reduced during hypercarbia as RBCs generally appear to lack the capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation but possess high intracellular buffer capacity; thus, RBC pH<sub>i</sub> demonstrate that the acidosis is sufficiently severe to reduce pH<sub>i</sub> in a tissue unable to regulate pH<sub>i</sub> and acts an internal control for the presence of an intracellular acidosis. In the second panel (ii) for each species, pH<sub>i</sub> of heart (squares), liver (triangles), brain (inverted triangles) and white muscle (WM; diamonds) is plotted; sampling occurred at 0 (closed symbols) and 3 h (open symbols). Fish were subjected to hypercarbia for 3 h depending on their CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance as follows: *Polyodon spathula* (1.5 kPa *PCO*<sub>2</sub>; A), *Lepisosteus oculatus* (6 kPa *PCO*<sub>2</sub>; B), *Atractosteus spatula* (6 kPa *PCO*<sub>2</sub>; C), *Ictalurus punctatus* (6 kPa *PCO*<sub>2</sub>; D), *Hoplosternum littorale* (4 kPa *PCO*<sub>2</sub>; H), *Astronotus ocellatus* (4 kPa *PCO*<sub>2</sub>, I), *Oreochromis sp.* (6 kPa *PCO*<sub>2</sub>; J). Significant differences between time points are indicated for each tissue by an asterisk (two-way t-test, P<0.05). In all species, pH<sub>e</sub> was significantly reduced at 3 h (P<0.05) and pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, brain, liver and white muscle were not reduced at any point except in *O. mykiss*; this is indicative of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in all fishes except *O. mykiss* which exhibited coupled pH regulation.



Figure 3.3: Evolution of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and coupled pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> regulation amongst adult fishes exposed to an acute (<48 h) respiratory acidosis of >1 kPa blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub>. Pattern of acid-base regulation [preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (black branches) or coupled pH regulation (white branches)] was determined directly via pH measurements or indirectly via CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance, which are indicted by superscript # or \$, respectively. Adjacent to species names it is indicated whether they are water or air breather, and the habitat of their primary geographical zone is listed (temperate, subtropical or tropical). Ancestral states for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation were reconstructed by likelihood using Mesquite (Maddison and maddison). Unless specified, all species were examined in this chapter; references are indicated below and correspond to superscript numbers: 1(Baker et al., 2015), 2(Wood et al., 1990), 3(Chapter 3; Baker et al., 2009a), 4(Chapter 3; Brauner et al., 2004), 5(R.B.S., M. Sackville, C. Damsgaard, L.M. Phuong, M. Hvas, T. Wang, M. Bayley, D.T.T. Huong, N.T. Phuong,

and C.J.B., unpublished observations; reviewed in Shartau et al., 2016a), 6(Chapter 3; Wood and LeMoigne, 1991), 7(Larsen et al., 1997), 8(Chapter 3; Heisler, 1982), 9(Wright et al., 1988)]. Phylogenetic relationships are based on (2009) and branch lengths are taken from various references utilizing fossil and molecular estimates of divergence times (Aschliman et al., 2012; Betancur-R et al., 2013; Betancur-R et al., 2005; Macqueen and Johnston, 2014; Meredith et al., 2011; Zhang et al., 2013); the phylogenetic tree was created using Mesquite (Maddison and Maddison, 2017).

Species	PCO <sub>2</sub>	Exposure	Cl <sup>-</sup> (mM)		Osmolarity (mM)		Hematocrit	
Species	(kPa)	time (ii)	Control	$CO_2$	Control	$CO_2$	Control	$^{\prime\prime}$ CO <sub>2</sub>
Polvodon spathula	1.5	3	111	113	248	252	27	18
		-	±4	±3	±6	±5	$\pm 2$	±2*
	1.5	6	121	114	265	266		
			$\pm 1$	±2*	$\pm 3$	±5*		
Acipenser transmontanus <sup>1,2</sup>	6	6	119	95			31	33
			$\pm 3$	±3*			$\pm 3$	$\pm 3$
	12	6	119	88			31	24
			$\pm 3$	±2*			$\pm 3$	±2*
Atractosteus spatula	6	3	128	127	286	305	33	27
-			±5	±3	±9	±12	$\pm 3$	±2
Lepisosteus oculatus	6	3	107	108	266	283	33	38
			±9	±1	±14	±7	$\pm 8$	$\pm 8$
Colossoma macropomum	4	3	147	138			28	31
			$\pm 4$	$\pm 6$			$\pm 1$	$\pm 2$
	20	3					22	24
							±1	±2
Brycon amazonicus	4	3	119	121			42	35
			±4	$\pm 6$			±1	±4
Hoplosternum littorale	4	3	120	128			31	33
			±4	±4			±1	$\pm 3$
Pterygoplichthys pardalis <sup>3</sup>	4.3	6	111	108	247	246	40	40
			±5	±3	±7	±5	±2	±2
Ictalurus punctatus	6	3	120	112	276	276	23	28
			±4	±2	±7	$\pm 6$	±2	±4
	1.5	3					27	35
Oncorhynchus mykiss		2					±2	±2*
	3	3					27	51
		2					±2	±4*
Oreochromis niloticus	6	3					21	28
	4	2	1.47	120			±∠	±δ
Astronotus ocellatus	4	3	14/	138				
			±9	±β				
Freshwater teleost <sup>4</sup>			125-132		262- 274			

Table 3.1: Plasma Cl<sup>-</sup> and osmolarity, and hematocrit of fishes subjected to hypercarbia exposure.

Significant differences between control and  $CO_2$  exposures are indicated by asterisk (P<0.05). Typical freshwater teleost Cl<sup>-</sup> and osmolarity values are shown for reference at the bottom of the table. 1(Baker et al., 2009a), 2(Baker and Brauner, 2012), 3(Brauner et al., 2004), 4(Edwards and Marshall, 2013).

Table 3.2: CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay in various fish species. CO<sub>2</sub> tension was increased at a rate of 2 kPa per hour, starting at normocarbia (~0.04 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>) until fish reached loss of equilibrium (LOE). Where LOE was reached, the CO<sub>2</sub> tension and time at which LOE was first recorded is indicated, and the max  $PCO_2$  exposure fish were able to tolerate (within range of our equipment) is noted, and finally, the median and mean CO<sub>2</sub> tension that LOE occurred are indicated. The exposure was repeated in a couple of species due to sufficient number of animals. There were a couple of species where CO<sub>2</sub> exposure ended once the first animal reached LOE as that endpoint was deemed sufficient to determine the presence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (e.g. *Lepisosteus oculatus*). CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance in a few species was high as they tolerated CO<sub>2</sub> tensions higher than our equipment could measure (26.6 kPa  $PCO_2$ ) and thus we used that CO<sub>2</sub> tension as an endpoint instead of LOE (e.g. *Colossoma macropomum*).

Species	n	# fish reaching LOE	Time to first LOE (h)	PCO <sub>2</sub> range of LOE (PCO <sub>2</sub> at 1 <sup>st</sup> LOE – PCO <sub>2</sub> at last LOE)	Median <i>P</i> CO <sub>2</sub> at LOE	Mean <i>P</i> CO2 at LOE
Entosphenus tridentatus	10	10	6.6	13.2 – 17.1	14.7	14.6±0.4
Potamotrygon spp.	10	10	5.0	10.1 – 11.9	11.0	11.1±0.2
Polyodon	7	7	1.0	1.9 - 5.9	2.0	2.7±0.5
spathula	8	8	0.6	1.1 – 1.9	1.4	1.4±0.1
Acipenser transmontanus	9	9	2.7	5.3 – 26	11.5	14.6±2.3
Lepisosteus	6	1	6.1	12.1 - n/a	n/a	n/a
oculatus	6	1	6.0	11.9 - n/a	n/a	n/a
Atractosteus spatula	8	1	6.0	12 - n/a	n/a	n/a
Arapaima gigas	10	8	9.7	19.3 – 26.7	26.7	24.4±1.0
Colossoma macropomum	10	0	>13.4	n/a (>26.7)	n/a	n/a
Electrophorus electricus	2	0	>13.4	n/a (>26.7)	n/a	n/a
Ictalurus	9	1	4.3	8.5 - n/a	n/a	n/a
punctatus	10	10	4.1	8.1 - 8.7	8.5	8.4±0.1

Species	n	# fish reaching LOE	Time to first LOE (h)	<b>PCO<sub>2</sub> range of LOE</b> ( <b>PCO<sub>2</sub> at 1<sup>st</sup> LOE</b> – <b>PCO<sub>2</sub> at last LOE</b> )	Median PCO2 at LOE	Mean PCO <sub>2</sub> at LOE
Ictalurus punctatus X Ictalurus furcatus	10	10	3.2	6.3 - 8.4	7.5	7.4±0.2
Pterygoplichthys pardalis	10	10	5.4	10.7 – 18	13.2	14.0±0.9
Oncorhynchus mykiss	9	9	1.8	3.5 - 5.7	5.1	4.8±0.3
Oncorhynchus kisutch	10	10	1.4	2.8 - 8.8	5.2	5.5±0.7
Synbranchus marmoratus	10	0	>13.4	n/a (>26.7)	n/a	n/a
Astronotus ocellatus	8	8	5.8	11.5 – 16.5	13.9	13.9±0.6
Oreochromis niloticus X mossambicus X hornorum	10	10	5.1	10.1 – 15.1	12.5	12.6±0.5
Lepidosiren paradoxa	8	0	>13.4	n/a (>26.7)	n/a	n/a

### Chapter 4: Embryonic Common Snapping Turtles (*Chelydra serpentina*) Preferentially Regulate Intracellular Tissue pH During Acid-Base Challenges

#### 4.1 Introduction

The nests of many reptiles naturally experience changes in carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>) levels, often resulting in an elevated CO<sub>2</sub> (hypercarbia) rearing environment for the embryos. These conditions arise due to a number of biotic and abiotic factors including nest saturation from precipitation, metabolic activity of microorganisms, and from changes in embryonic metabolism (Ackerman, 1977; Grigg et al., 2010; Lutz and Dunbar-Cooper, 1984). In nests of the broad-shelled river turtle (*Chelodina expansa*), green turtle (*Chelonia mydas*), and loggerhead turtle (*Caretta caretta*) CO<sub>2</sub> values can reach up to 5-8 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> (Booth, 1998; Prange and Ackerman, 1974); similar *P*CO<sub>2</sub> tensions have been recorded in crocodilian nests (Grigg et al., 2010; Lutz and Dunbar-Cooper, 1984).

The degree of disturbance and recovery from an acute hypercarbic-induced respiratory acidosis has been well described in adult amniotes, and initially it is typically characterized by reductions in both blood [extracellular pH (pH<sub>e</sub>)] and tissue pH [intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>)] that change in a qualitatively similar manner. Compensation of pH<sub>i</sub> is usually more rapid that of pH<sub>e</sub>, but compensation in both compartments is coupled (Busk et al., 1997; Nestler, 1990; Siesjö et al., 1972; Wasser et al., 1991), which we define here as coupled pH regulation. This pattern of coupled pH<sub>i</sub> and pH<sub>e</sub> compensation following a respiratory acidosis is thought to be representative of vertebrates in general. However, in CO<sub>2</sub> tolerant fishes, it is becoming increasingly clear that pH<sub>i</sub> in a number of species is tightly regulated in the complete absence of pH<sub>e</sub> regulation (Baker et al., 2009; Brauner et al., 2004; Harter et al., 2014; Heisler, 1982; Shartau and Brauner, 2014), termed preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Preferential pH<sub>i</sub>

challenges to acid-base regulation (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau and Brauner, 2014).

Chicken embryos between 60 and 90% of incubation subjected to hypercarbia (5 kPa  $PCO_2$ ) for 24 h experienced a reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> that was largely uncompensated (Burggren et al., 2012). Embryonic chickens are exceptionally hypercarbic tolerant as they can survive 1 h exposure to  $PCO_2$  of 10 kPa where pH<sub>e</sub> is reduced by ~0.8 pH units (Andrewartha et al., 2014), a degree of pH<sub>e</sub> depression typically observed in animals that preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> (Shartau and Brauner, 2014). Amniotic embryos are enclosed within structures (e.g. eggshell, chorioallantoic membrane) that create diffusion barriers and limit or eliminate the ability for net acid excretion with the environment necessary for pH compensation. Thus, tolerance of a respiratory acidosis may be associated with preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, a phenomenon that has not been investigated previously in embryonic amniotes.

Embryonic turtles can survive chronic high CO<sub>2</sub> in both nest (see above) and incubation environments (Wearing et al., 2014), suggesting a high degree of CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance for chronic, and likely acute, CO<sub>2</sub> exposure. We were interested in how turtles respond to severe acute respiratory acid-base disturbances as the ability to tolerate high  $CO_2$  could be associated with the capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, as observed in a number of fishes and a salamander during acute hypercarbia (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau and Brauner, 2014), but never in amniotes. We hypothesized that embryonic turtles preferentially regulate  $pH_i$  allowing them to tolerate severe acute acid-base challenges. To test this hypothesis, we conducted two series of experiments. Series 1 investigated the pattern of acid-base regulation in normocarbia/normoxia-reared animals subjected to an acute respiratory acidosis at three developmental stages (70 and 90% of incubation, and yearlings) to assess the pattern of acid-base regulation during development. Next, in Series 2, we were interested if the pattern of acid-base regulation differed in embryos (at 90% of incubation) that had been reared under constant hypercarbia (representative of typical CO<sub>2</sub> tensions in a natural nest environment) and then exposed to a more severe acute respiratory acidosis or to an acute respiratory alkalosis. The acid-base status of turtles was assessed in the blood compartment by measuring pH<sub>e</sub>, and in the tissues by measuring pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, brain, liver, white muscle,

kidney, and lung. The results of this study indicate that embryonic turtles preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub>, while the capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is reduced in yearlings as the transition to coupled pH regulation occurs.

#### 4.2 Methods

#### 4.2.1 Turtle embryo acquisition and incubation

Common snapping turtle eggs (*Chelydra serpentina* (Linnaeus, 1758)) were collected in north-western Minnesota, USA and transported by automobile to the laboratory at the University of North Texas (Minnesota Department of Natural Resources Permit No. 19772 to DAC). Eggs were staged to determine approximate age of each clutch (53-55 d total incubation period at 30°C (Yntema, 1968)); a clutch being embryos from the same nest. Eggs were incubated at 30°C in a walk-in, constant temperature room on a 14h:10h light:dark photoperiod. All embryos were incubated in plastic containers, placed in a bed of moist vermiculite mixed in a 1:1 ratio of vermiculite:water. Water content of the vermiculite was maintained by weighing the box twice weekly and adding water as needed to keep the mass constant.

Embryos from each clutch were divided into two groups, and reared in normocarbic/normoxic (0.03 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; "NC") or hypercarbic/normoxic (3.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; "HC3.5") conditions from that point onward. Exposure began at ~18-22% of incubation (10-12 days post-laying, where 100% of incubation would correspond with hatch), determined by dissection of at least two representative embryos from each clutch as described previously (Crossley and Altimiras, 2005; Eme et al., 2011). For NC incubation, embryos were sealed inside large Ziplock bags, with two holes in the bag that allowed parallel inflow and outflow of gas in normoxic/normocapnic conditions in a walk-in Percival<sup>®</sup> incubator (Percival Scientific, Perry, IA). HC3.5 embryos were incubated in separate 0.3 m<sup>3</sup> Percival incubators (model I30NLX, Percival Scientific, Perry, IA) fitted with IntellusUltra<sup>TM</sup> controllers and an IntellusUltra<sup>TM</sup> Web Server that allowed CO<sub>2</sub> to be regulated  $\pm 0.2\%$  and for O<sub>2</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> levels to be monitored remotely. The target gas tensions (3.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>) were achieved

73

using rotameters and Intellus<sup>™</sup> solenoid controllers, which controlled the upstream supply of compressed O<sub>2</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub>, respectively. Incoming O<sub>2</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> levels were monitored with analyzers (S-A/I and CD-3A, respectively; Ametek Applied Electrochemistry, IL, USA) connected to a PowerLab<sup>®</sup> with LabChart Pro<sup>®</sup> software (v 7 ADInstruments, CO, USA).

Yearlings from the previous clutch year (2013) were kept in 70 l tanks at 28°C with sufficient water for voluntary submergence and access to room air. They were fed 3 times weekly, and animals were fasted for 5 days prior to experimentation.

Measurements were made in embryos at 70% (N=8) and 90% (N=8) of incubation, which reflected developmental stages 22/23 and 25/26, respectively, or in yearlings (N=6) that were approximately one year old. This study used embryos from 13 clutches; each experimental exposure used typically one embryo, and occasionally two, per clutch. Three clutches of yearlings were used, two animals per clutch for each experimental exposure. All studies were approved by UNT IACUC #11-007.

#### 4.2.2 Experimental protocols

#### *Embryos: Surgical procedures and experimental set-up*

Embryos were removed from their respective incubation chambers and candled to identify a tertiary chorioallantoic membrane (CAM) artery. Embryos were placed in a temperature-controlled surgical chamber (30°C) under normocarbic/normoxic (NC) conditions and ~1 cm<sup>2</sup> of the eggshell was removed under a dissection microscope (Leica MZ6 or MZ3; Leica Microsystems, Waukegan, IL, USA). A tertiary CAM artery was isolated for arterial pressure monitoring and blood sampling in the experimental series described below. An occlusive catheter was inserted into a tertiary CAM using heat-pulled, heparinized, and saline-filled PE-50 tubing, as previously described (Crossley and Altimiras, 2005; Crossley and Altimiras, 2000). The surgical preparations were minimally invasive and no anesthesia/analgesia was used; the entire surgical procedure took 7-10 min. Following catheterization, the catheter was fixed to the shell with cyanoacrylic glue and embryos were placed in a water jacketed multi-chamber experimental unit (~700 cm<sup>3</sup> per chamber, one embryo per chamber, placed on cotton)

and allowed to acclimate for at least 60 min prior to experimentation (described below) at incubation gas tensions.

Temperature in the chambers was maintained at 30°C by recirculating water from a constant temperature circulator (VWR International, LLC, West Chester, PA, USA). Each chamber consisted of a container fitted with a lid with three ports that allowed the catheter and airlines to enter the chamber. To prevent changes in chamber temperature due to incoming gas flow, all incoming gas traversed a 1 m copper line submerged within the constant temperature circulator's water bath. Gas was forced into each chamber at a flow rate of 200 ml min<sup>-1</sup>. Cardiovascular measurements of blood pressure and heart rate were obtained by connecting the arterial catheter with saline-filled PE50 tubing to a pressure transducer held 1-3 cm above the egg, connected to an amplifier, and the pressure signal acquired at 40 Hz using PowerLab data recording system (ADInstruments, CO, USA) connected to a computer running Chartpro software (v 7.4 ADInstruments). Pressure transducers were calibrated prior to each measurement period with a vertical column of saline, and heart rate was determined with a software tachograph that integrated the arterial pressure trace. Cardiovascular measurements were made to verify embryos were alive during these acid-base exposures and to avoid sampling unhealthy animals, as well as to quantify cardiovascular changes during acidbase challenges.

#### Yearlings: Experimental set-up

Yearling turtles were placed in a water-jacketed, multi-chamber, stainless steel experimental apparatus (~4000 cm<sup>3</sup> per chamber, one animal per chamber) containing ~1000 ml tap water and allowed to acclimate for at least 90 min prior to experiments (described below). Temperature in the chambers was maintained at 30°C by recirculating water within the water jacket from a constant temperature circulator (VWR International, West Chester, PA, USA). Each chamber consisted of a container fitted with a lid with small holes that allowed air lines to enter the chamber. Air or N<sub>2</sub>/O<sub>2</sub>/CO<sub>2</sub> gas mix was bubbled into the water using an air stone to ensure sufficient gas flow.

#### 4.2.3 Experimental treatments

Series 1: Acid-base status during development in normocarbic normoxia following exposure to severe hypercarbic hypoxia.

The specific objective of this series was to induce a severe respiratory acidosis and investigate for the presence or absence of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation rather than mimicking the natural rearing environment of the turtle. NC reared animals that had been placed in individual chambers as described above were sampled (as described below) at either 70% of incubation or 90% of incubation, or as yearlings after exposure to 1 h of NC (control) or 1 h exposure to severe hypercarbic hypoxia (13 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> and 9 kPa  $PO_2$ ; HC13). The 1 h exposure time was chosen because in fish preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is observed at maximal pHe depression, which occurs within 1 h of hypercarbia exposure (Baker, 2010; Baker et al., 2009a); no comparable embryonic or reptile studies exist to provide guidance for exposure times (Everaert et al., 2011). HC13 was generated using three mass flow controllers (GFC Aalborg; Orangeburg, NY, USA) and command module (Model SDPROC, Aalborg; Orangeburg, NY, USA) supplied with compressed O<sub>2</sub>, CO<sub>2</sub>, and N<sub>2</sub> to achieve the desired gas mix. O<sub>2</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> levels were monitored with analyzers (S-A/I and CD-3A, respectively; Ametek Applied Electrochemistry, IL, USA). Gas composition in the chamber changed within 1-2 min and was maintained for the remaining hour prior to sampling.

# Series 2: Response to a respiratory acidosis or respiratory alkalosis at 90% of incubation in embryos reared under constant hypercarbia levels.

Embryos reared in HC3.5 at 90% of incubation were sampled to examine the effect of hypercarbic rearing on acid-base balance at CO<sub>2</sub> tensions likely representative of the natural nest environment. Next, the effect of respiratory acidosis on HC3.5 reared embryos was examined by exposing HC3.5 embryos at 90% of incubation to HC13 for 1 h and then sampled as described below. To examine the effect of a respiratory alkalosis, HC3.5 reared embryos were exposed to normocarbic normoxia for either 3 or 24 h and then sampled as below.

Due to limited numbers of HC3.5 reared embryos in Series 2, only embryos at 90% of incubation were investigated. We chose this developmental stage over 70% of incubation because we felt they would be more likely to tolerate the severe acid-base challenges and increase the likelihood of Series 2 being successful. There were no turtles continuously reared to yearlings under HC3.5, thus, we could not include yearlings in Series 2.

## 4.2.4 Blood sampling, animal euthanasia, tissue sampling and ions- Embryos

Embryonic heart rate and blood pressure were continuously recorded prior to sampling. Following a 1 h exposure period approximately 70-200 µl of blood was sampled from the cannulated CAM artery by disconnecting the cannula from the pressure transducer and allowing the blood to passively flow into a 1ml heparinized plastic syringe; blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and total  $CO_2$  (TCO<sub>2</sub>) were measured immediately. pH<sub>e</sub> was measured using a thermostated capillary pH electrode (model BMS 3 MK 2; Radiometer; Copenhagen, Denmark) that was calibrated daily with buffer solutions (BDH5050, pH 7.38 and BDH5058, pH 6.86; VWR; Radnor, PA, USA). TCO<sub>2</sub> was measured using a total CO<sub>2</sub> analyzer (Corning model 965 Analyzer; Essex, United Kingdom) and was calibrated using freshly prepared 0, 10, and 25 mmol l<sup>-1</sup> NaHCO<sub>3</sub>. Embryos were then euthanized with an overdose of sodium pentobarbital (100mgkg<sup>-1</sup>) injected into the CAM artery. Tissues (heart, brain, liver, white muscle, kidney, and lung) were then quickly dissected (within 5 min), placed in micro-centrifuge tubes, frozen in liquid nitrogen and stored at -80°C for later measurements of pH<sub>i</sub>. Tissue was later ground under liquid nitrogen and pH<sub>i</sub> was measured using the metabolic inhibitor tissue homogenate method (MITH: see Appendix for detailed description of this method); this technique has been validated (Baker et al., 2009b; Portner et al., 1990) and used in fish (Baker and Brauner, 2012; Baker et al., 2015; Brauner et al., 2004; Regan et al., 2016) and non-fish (Busk et al., 1997; Galli and Richards, 2012) studies. Plasma Na<sup>+</sup>, K<sup>+</sup>, Cl<sup>-</sup>, and Ca<sup>2+</sup> were measured in embryos at 90% of incubation at each rearing condition using Nova Biomedical Stat profile prime (Waltham, MA, USA).

#### – Yearlings

To sample blood and tissues in yearlings, turtles were removed from the chamber, euthanized with an overdose of isoflurane and the plastron removed and the heart exposed. Blood was sampled (~200-300  $\mu$ l) from the right aorta using a 1 ml syringe with a 30 gauge heparinized needle. Tissues (heart, brain, liver, white muscle, kidney, and lung) were immediately dissected out (within 6-7 min) and frozen for later analysis as described above. Due to the greater blood volume collected in yearlings, blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> was measured at the same time as pH<sub>e</sub> using a *P*CO<sub>2</sub> electrode (E201/E5037; Loligo Systems; Denmark) thermostated at 30°C in a Radiometer BMS 3 MK 2 (Copenhagen, Denmark) calibrated daily with humidified pre-mixed gases. All measurements of pH<sub>i</sub> and pH<sub>e</sub>, and TCO<sub>2</sub> were measured as described above.

#### 4.2.5 Calculations and statistical analyses

Plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] and *P*CO<sub>2</sub> were calculated using measured TCO<sub>2</sub> and pH values as described by Brauner et al. (2004). The CO<sub>2</sub> solubility coefficient and pKa were calculated using equations from Heisler (1984) which were adapted, and experimentally validated, for use with reptile blood (Stabenau and Heming, 1993). To determine how a 1 h HC13 exposure changes [H<sup>+</sup>] relative to NC (control) [H<sup>+</sup>], pH<sub>i</sub> values were converted to [H<sup>+</sup>] ([H<sup>+</sup>]=10<sup>-pH</sup>) and HC13 [H<sup>+</sup>] was subtracted from NC [H<sup>+</sup>] to calculate the net [H<sup>+</sup>] difference. This was done for each tissue at each developmental age and was plotted as mean  $\pm$  s.e.m.

All data was analyzed using R version 3.1.0 (The R Foundation for Statistical Computing). Homogeneity of variances was tested with the Levene's test (P<0.05) and normality of distributions was tested with the Shapiro-Wilkinson test (P<0.05). Differences between control and treatment group means of individual measurements were compared using a Welch two-sample t-test (P<0.05). Comparisons of means across treatments, tissues and/or developmental age were conducted using either a one-way or two-way ANOVA (Tukey post hoc, P<0.05) as appropriate. Data that did not meet the assumption of normality for a one-way ANOVA were analyzed using the Kruskal-Wallis test (P<0.05). Absolute blood pressure was corrected for the pressure transducer's distance above the egg. Mean arterial pressure (kPa) and mean heart rate (beats min<sup>-1</sup>)

were calculated from the individual mean values for embryos in each exposure group. Mean arterial pressure and mean heart rate for individual embryos were based on stable period at 10 min intervals over the exposure time period. Mean arterial pressure and mean heart rate during exposure were compared to unexposed measurements using a one-way ANOVA, followed by a Tukey post hoc (P<0.05). All values are presented as mean±s.e.m; sample size for NC embryos are N=8, NC yearlings are N=6, and HC3.5 embryos are N=6. All figures were created using GraphPad Prism v5.0 (GraphPad Software Inc., 2007).

#### 4.3 Results

### 4.3.1 Series 1: Acid-base status during development in normocarbic normoxia following exposure to severe acute hypercarbic hypoxia

Animals reared at NC and transferred to HC13 for 1 h exhibited a significant reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> and a significant increase in blood  $PCO_2$  at all three developmental ages (Welch 2-sample t-test, P<0.05) (Fig. 4.1A) as expected *a priori*. Blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] did not change significantly (Fig. 4.1A). The pattern of changes in pH<sub>i</sub>, however, differed between ages. At 70% of incubation, hypercarbia was associated with a significant increase in pH<sub>i</sub> of the brain, white muscle, and lung but no statistically significant change was observed in heart, liver, or kidney (Fig. 4.1B); at 90% of incubation only heart pH<sub>i</sub> significantly increased while no changes in liver, brain, white muscle, lung, or kidney were observed (Fig. 4.1C). In yearlings there were no significant changes in pH<sub>i</sub> of any tissues (Welch 2-sample t-test, P>0.05), however, there was a trend toward a reduction in pH<sub>i</sub> in most tissues (Fig. 4.1D).

To assess the effect of development and tissue type on acid-base changes following acute hypercarbia,  $[H^+]$  was calculated from pH<sub>i</sub>, then tissue  $[H^+]$  following 1 h hypercarbia was subtracted from the respective NC (control) tissue  $[H^+]$  for each tissue type and at each developmental age. There was a significant effect of developmental age on the difference in tissue  $[H^+]$  from control, where a progressive statistically significant increase in tissue  $[H^+]$  was observed with an increase in developmental age (two-way ANOVA, Tukey's post hoc; P<0.01) indicating a progressive reduction in the ability to preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub>. Additionally, the various tissues respond differently as development proceeds as the interaction of developmental age and tissue significantly affected the net change in tissue [H<sup>+</sup>] (i.e. the changes between treatment and control [H<sup>+</sup>] between tissue differ significantly when developmental age is considered) (two-way ANOVA, P<0.05) (Fig. 4.2).

Cardiovascular measurements indicated that embryos at 70% of incubation reared in NC and exposed to HC13 exhibited no significant changes in blood pressure ( $0.50 \pm 0.08$  kPa) or heart rate ( $48.3 \pm 9.1$  beats min<sup>-1</sup>) from controls (one-way ANOVA, *P*>0.05). In embryos at 90% of incubation, blood pressure and heart rate were reduced during HC13 exposure from  $1.14 \pm 0.09$  kPa to  $0.82 \pm 0.06$  kPa and  $53.2 \pm 4.6$  beats min<sup>-1</sup> to  $36.7 \pm 2.7$  beats min<sup>-1</sup>, respectively (one-way ANOVA, Tukey's post hoc, *P*<0.001).

# 4.3.2 Series 2: Response to an acute respiratory acidosis or alkalosis at 90% of incubation in embryos reared under constant hypercarbia

Embryos at 90% of incubation reared at HC3.5 had increased pH<sub>e</sub>, blood  $PCO_2$ and [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] compared to those reared in NC (Fig. 4.3A-C). pH<sub>i</sub> was also significantly elevated in all tissues, except liver (Fig. 4.3D-I). Exposure of HC3.5 reared embryos at 90% of incubation to HC13 for 1 h resulted in a significant reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> and a significant increase in blood  $PCO_2$  but no change in blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] (Welch 2-sample ttest, P<0.001) (Fig. 4.4A). Heart pH<sub>i</sub> was significantly reduced; other tissues did not change (Welch 2 sample t-test, P<0.05) (Fig. 4.4B). Plasma ions (Na<sup>+</sup>, K<sup>+</sup>, Cl<sup>-</sup>, and Ca<sup>2+</sup>) were measured in untreated embryos at 90% of incubation to assess for differences due to rearing conditions that may affect acid-base status between the groups. The HC3.5 reared embryos had a greater [K<sup>+</sup>] compared to the NC reared embryos (t-test, P<0.05). There were no differences in other ion concentrations (Table 4.1).

Embryos at 90% of incubation reared in HC3.5 and transferred to NC for 3 or 24 h exhibited a significant increase in pH<sub>e</sub> (one-way ANOVA, P<0.0001) and reduction in blood  $PCO_2$  (one-way ANOVA, Tukey's post hoc, P<0.001) (Fig. 4.5A). There was a significant reduction in [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] following 24 h NC exposure (one-way ANOVA, Tukey's post hoc, P<0.01) (Fig. 4.5A). Tissue pH<sub>i</sub> was unchanged at 3 h but at 24 h, heart

and brain pH<sub>i</sub> were significantly reduced (one-way ANOVA, Tukey's post hoc, P<0.05) (Fig. 4.5B,C). Cardiovascular measurements showed that embryos at 90% of incubation reared at HC3.5 had reductions in blood pressure and heart rate during HC13 exposure from  $0.96 \pm 0.05$  kPa to  $0.67 \pm 0.04$  kPa and  $58.1 \pm 1.3$  beats min<sup>-1</sup> to  $39.6 \pm 1.5$  beats min<sup>-1</sup>, respectively (one-way ANOVA, Tukey's post hoc, P<0.001).

#### 4.4 Discussion

Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has been documented in a number of fishes, and in an aquatic salamander, but never before in amniotes (Cameron, 1989a; Everaert et al., 2011; Shartau and Brauner, 2014). We hypothesized that embryonic turtles preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> during a severe acute acidosis, which is supported by our findings here on snapping turtles; this is the first time this pattern of pH regulation has been identified in an amniote. These results suggest that coupled pH regulation is not the strategy used during embryonic development of snapping turtles and demonstrates that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is likely important for tolerating acute respiratory acid-base disturbances in this amniote species at this development stage.

#### 4.4.1 Capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation shifts during development

Exposure of NC reared turtles to HC13 greatly increased blood  $PCO_2$  (Fig. 4.1A); the difference between blood and environmental  $PCO_2$  of 13 kPa likely represents nonequilibrium between the animals and the environment due to the short exposure time. Despite the lack of complete  $CO_2$  equilibration, turtles experience large reductions in pH<sub>e</sub> (which was the objective of the treatment) but there was no reduction in pH<sub>i</sub> (Fig. 4.1) consistent with preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. However, there appears to be a reduction in the capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation between the younger embryos and yearlings. During 1 h HC13 exposure, three tissues exhibited a significant increase in pH<sub>i</sub> in embryos at 70% of incubation, while this was observed in only one tissue in 90% of incubation embryos and none in yearlings (Fig. 4.1B-D), suggesting younger embryos possess a greater capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. When contrasted to adult western painted turtles, the lack of  $pH_i$  change during hypercarbia in embryos is impressive as adult western painted turtles (the only known study to measure  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$  in adult turtles exposed to hypercapnia) (Wasser et al., 1991) experiencing 1 h of hypercapnia exhibited severe reductions in  $pH_e$ , and  $pH_i$  of heart, liver, brain, and skeletal muscle. The difference between pH of hypercapnic exposed and control animals is plotted for blood and tissues (Wasser et al., 1991) in Figure 4.6, along with relevant results from this study to highlight the large  $pH_i$  reductions in adult turtles compared to embryos.

The differences in the pattern of acid-base regulation between snapping turtle embryos and yearlings, and western painted turtle adults is likely due to changes in the capacity for preferential  $pH_i$  regulation and buffering capacity. An increase in  $pH_i$  from control values during an acidosis (or decrease during an alkalosis) is due to preferential  $pH_i$  regulation and not buffer capacity, as the latter can only delay or minimize the reductions in pH during an acidosis (or increases during an alkalosis). Turtles appear to transition from preferentially regulating  $pH_i$  to having coupled pH regulation.

#### 4.4.2 Rearing condition alters blood and tissue acid-base status

Rearing condition appears to affect blood and tissue acid-base status. Embryos at 90% of incubation reared at HC3.5 had a blood  $PCO_2$  of 3.6 kPa  $PCO_2$  (Fig. 4.3B), which was slightly higher than incubation  $PCO_2$  of 3.5 kPa  $PCO_2$ . This indicates that these embryos were in equilibrium with environmental  $PCO_2$ , as would be expected, and the slightly higher blood  $PCO_2$  would permit the release of metabolically produced  $CO_2$  to their environment. Additionally, these embryos experienced a higher pH<sub>e</sub> and blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] compared to NC reared embryos (Fig. 4.3A,C) suggesting these embryos have compensated pH<sub>e</sub> in chronic hypercarbia; pH<sub>i</sub> was also elevated in all tissues, except liver (Fig. 4.3D-I). The increase in blood HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> (Fig. 4.3C) and plasma K<sup>+</sup> (Table 4.1) may indicate that these embryos compensate pH<sub>e</sub> similar to chicken embryos during chronic elevations in CO<sub>2</sub>, as the latter control pH<sub>e</sub> by a combination of HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> uptake from the shell and excretion of H<sup>+</sup> into albumen in exchange for K<sup>+</sup> (Bruggeman et al., 2007; Crooks and Simkiss, 1974; Rowlett and Simkiss, 1989). The increase in blood HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> may facilitate pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in turtle embryos by providing a greater HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> gradient of HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>/Cl<sup>-</sup> exchange.

#### 4.4.3 Acid-base regulation during development

Changes in the pattern of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during development are expected as a single cell develops into a complex organism. In the earliest developmental stages, cells cannot rely on extracellular pH regulation as the extracellular compartment does not yet exist; appropriately, *in vitro* studies measuring pH<sub>i</sub> of post-fertilization single celled oocytes of mammals have shown that they are capable of regulating and defending pH<sub>i</sub> against external acid-base challenges (Erdogan et al., 2005; FitzHarris and Baltz, 2009; Lane, 1999; Squirrell et al., 2001). Similarly, Molich and Heisler (Molich and Heisler, 2005) found that early stage embryonic cells of zebrafish (Danio rerio) regulate pH<sub>i</sub> when exposed to changes in ambient  $PCO_2$ . Aside from studies on pH<sub>e</sub> regulation in chicken embryos, which show incomplete pH<sub>e</sub> regulation and are suggestive of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, there are no other studies, to our knowledge, investigating acid-base regulation in embryonic amniotes or vertebrates once the extracellular space and circulatory system develops (Brauner, 2008; Everaert et al., 2011). Recently, however, the authors investigated the response of American alligator embryos to severe respiratory acidosis and found that they also preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub>, similar to turtle embryos shown here (Shartau et al., in press).

During ontogeny, the capacity for coupled pH regulation increases due to the development of the extracellular space and necessary structures (e.g. cardiovascular, respiratory, and renal systems). Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has not been identified in adult amniotes as pH<sub>i</sub> is coupled to changes in pH<sub>e</sub> during acid-base disturbances (Baldwin et al., 1995; Malan et al., 1985; Nestler, 1990; Siesjö et al., 1972; Wasser et al., 1991; Wood and Schaefer, 1978); however, this is not the case in all adult vertebrates. A number of fishes (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau and Brauner, 2014), including a salamander (Heisler et al., 1982), preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> when subjected to severe acute acid-base disturbances despite reductions of pH<sub>e</sub> > 1 pH units.

Snapping turtle embryos and yearlings are tolerant of acute hypercarbia, similar to other species capable of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation; this pattern of pH regulation appears to confer exceptional tolerance to CO<sub>2</sub> tensions up to 12 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> (Baker et al., 2009a; Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau and Brauner, 2014). Without preferentially regulating

pH<sub>i</sub>, it is unlikely these animals could tolerate, and thus, be able to maintain acid-base status during high CO<sub>2</sub> tensions due to putative limitations on pH<sub>e</sub> regulation. The "bicarbonate concentration threshold", originally described by Heisler (Heisler, 1984; Heisler et al., 1982) limits plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] uptake to approximately 27-33 mmol l<sup>-1</sup> which limits complete pH<sub>e</sub> compensation to CO<sub>2</sub> tensions below ~2-2.5 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> (Brauner and Baker, 2009). In addition to conferring exceptional tolerance to hypercarbic-induced acidosis, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation appears to play a role in shortterm pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during both metabolic acidoses, metabolic alkalosis (Harter et al., 2014), and respiratory alkalosis (Fig. 4.5).

Similar to some fishes, including the armoured catfish (*Pterygoplichthys pardalis*), preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation acts as a general pattern of acid-base regulation in turtle development as it protects against respiratory/metabolic acidosis of HC13 exposure (Fig. 4.1). Additionally, embryos reared at 3.5 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, which likely mirror natural nest conditions, largely maintained pH<sub>i</sub> during both HC13 and NC exposure, which create an acidosis and alkalosis, respectively (Fig. 4.4; 4.5); this suggests that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a pattern of acid-base regulation that is used during the course of development, conferring robust capacity to cope with acid-base challenges.

#### Cardiovascular function may be protected by preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may protect cardiac function in embryos at 70% of incubation. Blood pressure and heart rate did not change during severe acute acidosis, this response is similar to what is seen in white sturgeon (Baker et al., 2011) and armoured catfish (Hanson et al., 2009) during acute hypercarbia, both preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulators; however, cardiac function in embryos at 90% of incubation was not preserved. Difference in cardiac function between development ages may be due to the increased metabolic demand of older embryos being depressed by changes in CO<sub>2</sub> and O<sub>2</sub> (Erasmus et al., 1971), as in adult turtles cardiac function is reduced during lower metabolic demand (Jackson, 1987; Jackson et al., 1991).

#### 4.4.4 Conclusions and perspectives

Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has only been described a handful of times in fishes and amphibians (Baker et al., 2009a; Brauner and Baker, 2009; Brauner et al., 2004; Harter et al., 2014; Heisler, 1982; Heisler et al., 1982; Shartau and Brauner, 2014), but now our findings indicate that an amniote, the common snapping turtle, can also preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub>. It is intriguing to think that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may represent the "default" pattern of acid-base regulation used during development, starting from the single cell oocyte, and in some animals is maintained from this embryonic condition through to the adult stage. Clearly this is an area worthy of further investigation. Understanding the pattern of acid-base regulation in embryos and adults, and the transition between these different patterns of pH regulation will provide significant insight into acid-base homeostasis during development of amniotes, and vertebrates in general.

In conclusion, we demonstrated the first occurrence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in an amniote; furthermore, we also found that the capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation changed during development between embryo to yearling. Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in developing snapping turtles and other amniotes, such as American alligators (Shartau et al., in press), likely plays an important role in allowing embryos to successfully develop when faced with acute acid-base challenges for which typical adult mechanisms of acidbase compensation are unavailable. Future studies should investigate whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is used during development of other amniotes, and vertebrates; it would be interesting to assess if the capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation changes from embryo to adult in animals that are able to preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> as adults. Additionally, investigating the cellular and molecular mechanisms of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, and how they change during development will be an important contribution to understanding acid-base physiology in vertebrates.



Figure 4.1: Effect of exposure to an acute respiratory acidosis in common snapping turtle (*Chelydra serpentina*) embryos (at 70 or 90% of incubation) or yearlings in Series 1 on blood and tissue acid-base status. Blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] are presented on a pH-HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> plot. Embryos at 70% of incubation ( $\bullet$ ), 90% of incubation ( $\blacksquare$ ), or yearlings ( $\blacktriangle$ ) were sampled in normocarbia (0.03 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa *P*O<sub>2</sub>; NC) or following 1 h hypercarbic hypoxia (13 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, 9 kPa *P*O<sub>2</sub>; HC13) exposure; curved lines represent *P*CO<sub>2</sub> isopleths (A). The relationship between pH<sub>e</sub> and tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) in snapping turtles is indicated for 70% of incubation (B), 90% of incubation (C), and yearlings (D) following 1 h exposure to HC13. Tissues are indicated by the following symbols: heart ( $\bullet$ , H), liver ( $\blacksquare$ , L), lung ( $\blacktriangle$ , U), kidney ( $\triangledown$ , K), brain ( $\diamondsuit$ , B), white muscle (O, WM) and red cell ( $\blacksquare$ , RBC - yearlings only). Values are presented as means $\pm$ s.e.m; *n*=8 for 70 and 90% of incubation, and *n*=6 for yearlings. A: symbols indicate significant differences (*P*<0.05) between

control (NC) and treatment (HC13) for  $pH_e$  (\*), blood  $PCO_2$  ( $\nabla$ ), and blood  $HCO_3^-$  ( $\Phi$ ). B, C and D: \*significant differences in  $pH_i$  from the NC group, letter next to asterisk indicates tissue (P < 0.05).



Figure 4.2: Difference in tissue  $[H^+]$  from control following 1h exposure to hypercarbia hypoxia (13 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 9 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; HC13) relative to normocarbic (0.03 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; NC) reared common snapping turtles (*Chelydra serpentina*) of Series 1. Concentrations of H<sup>+</sup> were calculated from tissue pH ( $[H^+]=10^{-pH}$ ) and the mean NC  $[H^+]$  was subtracted from individual HC13  $[H^+]$  values to calculate a mean difference  $[H^+] \pm s.e.m$ . This was done for each tissue at each developmental age. 70% of incubation (O), 90% of incubation ( $\blacksquare$ ) and yearlings ( $\blacktriangle$ ). Positive  $[H^+]$  values indicate an increase in tissue  $[H^+]$  and negative  $[H^+]$  values indicate a reduction in tissue  $[H^+]$ . Significant differences between  $[H^+]$  changes across developmental ages and tissues were determined using a 2-way ANOVA, followed by Tukey's post hoc (n=8 for 70 and 90% of incubation, and n=6 for yearlings). Uppercase letters that differ indicate significant differences between determined age and lowercase letters that differ indicate significant differences between developmental age in the same tissue following separate 1-way ANOVA followed by Tukey's post hoc (P<0.05).



Figure 4.3: Changes in blood and tissue acid-base status in common snapping turtles (*Chelydra serpentina*) embryos at 90% of incubation continuously reared in either normocarbia or hypercarbia. (A) blood pH, (B) blood  $PCO_2$  (kPa), (C) blood  $HCO_3^-$  (mmol  $\Gamma^-$ ), (D) heart pH, (E) liver pH, (F) brain pH, (G) kidney pH, (H) lung pH, and (I) white muscle pH, where different incubation conditions are indicated as follows: normocarbia (0.03 kPa  $PCO_2$ , 21 kPa  $PO_2$ ; NC,  $\blacksquare$ ) and hypercarbia (3.5 kPa  $PCO_2$ , 21 kPa  $PO_2$ ; HC3.5,  $\blacksquare$ ). Data are means  $\pm$  s.e.m.; *n*=8 for NC embryos, and *n*=6 for HC3.5 embryos. These data are re-plotted from figures 1 and 4. Significant differences between rearing conditions are indicated by asterisk (*P*<0.05).



Figure 4.4: Effect of exposure to an acute respiratory acidosis in snapping turtle embryos (*Chelydra serpentina*) at 90% of incubation in Series 2 reared continuously and sampled in hypercarbia (3.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; HC3.5) or following 1 h exposure to hypercarbic hypoxia (13 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 9 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; HC13). Blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] are presented on a pH-HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> plot. Embryos were sampled in HC3.5 or following 1 h HC13 exposure; curved lines represent PCO<sub>2</sub> isopleths (A). The relationship between pH<sub>e</sub> and tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) in snapping turtles following 1 h exposure to HC13. Tissues are indicated by the following symbols: heart ( $\bullet$ , H), liver ( $\blacksquare$ , L), lung ( $\blacktriangle$ , U), kidney ( $\blacktriangledown$ , K), brain ( $\diamondsuit$ , B), and white muscle (O, WM). Values are presented as means ± s.e.m. (*n*=6). A: symbols indicate significant differences (*P*<0.05) between HC3.5 and HC13 for pH<sub>e</sub> (\*) and blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> ( $\bigtriangledown$ ). B: \*significant differences in pH<sub>i</sub> from the NC group, letter next to asterisk indicates tissue (*P*<0.05).



Figure 4.5: Effect of exposure to normocarbia in snapping turtle embryos (*Chelydra serpentina*) at 90% of incubation in Series 2 reared continuously and sampled in hypercarbia (3.5 kPa  $PCO_2$ , 21 kPa  $PO_2$ ; HC3.5) or following 1 h exposure to normocarbia (0.03 kPa  $PCO_2$ , 21 kPa  $PO_2$ ; NC) for either 3 or 24 h. Blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] are presented on a pH-HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> plot. Embryos were sampled in HC3.5 or following 1 h HC13 exposure; curved lines represent  $PCO_2$  isopleths (A). The relationship between pH<sub>e</sub> and tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) in snapping turtles following 1 h

exposure to HC13 for 3 h (B) or 24 h (C). Tissues are indicated by the following symbols: heart ( $\bullet$ , H), liver ( $\blacksquare$ , L), lung ( $\blacktriangle$ , U), kidney ( $\blacktriangledown$ , K), brain ( $\blacklozenge$ , B), and white muscle (O, WM). A: different letters indicate significant differences (P < 0.05) between control (NC) and treatment (HC13) for pH<sub>e</sub> (Uppercase letters), blood  $PCO_2$  (lowercase letters), and blood HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> (Greek letters). B, C and D: \*significant differences in pH<sub>i</sub> from the NC group, letter next to asterisk indicates tissue (P < 0.05).


Figure 4.6: Difference in blood and tissue pH of turtles during development following exposure to hypercarbia relative to normocarbia in common snapping turtles (*Chelydra serpentina*) (70 and 90% of incubation and yearlings; this study) and adult western painted turtles (*Chrysemys picta bellii*) (Wasser et al., 1991). Control pH values for pH<sub>e</sub>, and pH<sub>i</sub> of heart, liver, brain and muscle were subtracted from the values determined following either 1 h HC13 (13 kPa  $PCO_2$ , 9 kPa  $PO_2$ ) exposure (from Figure 4.1) in snapping turtles or 1 h 6.5 kPa  $PCO_2$  exposure in western painted turtles turtles. Mean control (normocarbic) pH was subtracted from individual hypercarbic values to calculate a mean; differences are shown as means only to visualize the large reductions in pH<sub>i</sub> in adult turtles compared to either embryos or yearlings in the present study. 70% of incubation ( $\bigcirc$ ), 90% of incubation ( $\blacksquare$ ), yearlings ( $\blacktriangle$ ) and adult western painted turtle ( $\bigstar$ ).

	Na <sup>+</sup>	$\mathbf{K}^{+}$	Cľ	Ca <sup>2+</sup>
	(mmol $l^{-1}$ )	$(\mathbf{mmol}\ \mathbf{l}^{-1})$	$(\mathbf{mmol}\ \mathbf{l}^{-1})$	(mmol l <sup>-1</sup> )
NC	129.0±3.7	3.5±0.1	116.4±3.4	1.4±0.1
HC3.5	135.0±3.2	3.9±0.1*	117.0±3.7	1.4±0.1

Table 4.1: Plasma ion concentrations at 90% of incubation in Chelydra serpentina embryosreared in NC and HC3.5

NC, normocarbia (0.03 kPa  $PCO_2$ , 21 kPa  $PO_2$ ; N=8) and HC3.5, hypercarbia (13 kPa  $PCO_2$ , 9 kPa  $PO_2$ ; N=6) reared in (common snapping turtles) embryos. Data are means  $\pm$  s.e.m. \*Significance between rearing conditions (P<0.05).

# **Chapter 5: American Alligator Embryos Tightly Regulate Intracellular pH During a Severe Acidosis**

### 5.1 Introduction

Acid-base regulation in adult amniotes relies on net H<sup>+</sup> exchange with the environment through ventilatory and/or renal pathways (Cameron, 1989a); however, during embryonic development of oviparous animals this is constrained as the egg shell structure limits environmental interaction (Eme and Crossley, 2015; Erasmus et al., 1971; Everaert et al., 2011). Acid-base balance is one of the most important physiological parameters and tight pH regulation is critical as small deviations can have large effects on molecular function, and ultimately reduce whole animal performance (Putnam and Roos, 1997). In adult amniotes, compensation of intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) following an acid-base disturbance is usually more rapid than that of blood pH (extracellular pH; pH<sub>e</sub>) but compensation in both compartments is coupled, termed coupled pH regulation. Complete pH<sub>i</sub> recovery during a sustained respiratory acidosis occurs only following approximately >50% pH<sub>e</sub> compensation (Shartau et al., 2016b; Shartau et al., 2016a). Thus, acid-base regulation in adult amniotes is characterized by the regulation of pHe, which ensures pHi is protected (Shartau et al., 2016a) – the response in embryonic amniotes constrained within an egg shell is poorly understood (Eme and Crossley, 2015; Everaert et al., 2011). Limited evidence from snapping turtle embryos *Chelvdra serpentina* during severe acute respiratory metabolic acidosis suggests that the pattern of acid-base regulation in embryos may differ from adults. Exposure to an acute elevated environmental CO<sub>2</sub> tension (hypercarbia) of C. serpentina embryos at two developmental ages resulted in a dramatic reduction in pH<sub>e</sub>; however, pH<sub>i</sub> was observed to be protected (Shartau et al., 2016b). This trait is referred to as preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and has only previously been observed in a few adult anamniotes (e.g. white sturgeon [Acipenser transmontanus], armoured catfish [Pterygoplichthys pardalis] and greater siren [Siren lacertina]), but never in adult amniotes (Shartau and Brauner, 2014; Shartau et al., 2016b).

Vertebrates capable of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation exhibit no detectable  $pH_i$ reduction during a severe respiratory acidosis, and notably,  $pH_e$  compensation is not required for  $pH_i$  protection (Shartau et al., 2016a). Regulation of  $pH_e$  for coupled pHregulation is limited in embryos due to barriers created by the eggshell and associated membranes (e.g. chorioallantoic membrane) (Erasmus et al., 1971; Everaert et al., 2011; Shartau et al., 2016a). Additionally, the absence or incomplete formation of an extracellular compartment and necessary cardiorespiratory and renal structures, limit  $pH_e$ regulation (Eme and Crossley, 2015; Everaert et al., 2011; Shartau et al., 2016b); consequently, preferential  $pH_i$  regulation may be a more common trait in reptilian embryos as observed in *C. serpentina*, particularly those that are known to be tolerant of conditions that induce an acid-base disturbance such as elevated CO<sub>2</sub>.

The nests of some reptilian species naturally experience large increases in CO<sub>2</sub> and reductions in O<sub>2</sub> (Grigg et al., 2010; Lutz and Dunbar-Cooper, 1984); this may create challenges for acid-base regulation and be further constrained by limited nest and eggshell diffusion (Erasmus et al., 1971). It has been documented that the mound nests of crocodilians can naturally experience CO<sub>2</sub> levels of 2-8.5 kPa (Grigg et al., 2010; Lutz and Dunbar-Cooper, 1984). Chronic high CO<sub>2</sub> tensions may not adversely affect crocodilian embryos during rearing (Eme and Crossley, 2015), but nothing is known about their acid-base status during either chronic or acute CO<sub>2</sub> exposure (Everaert et al., 2011). We were interested in determining whether embryonic crocodilians can protect tissue pH during acute hypercarbia hypoxia, similar to that observed in C. serpentina. I hypothesized that Alligator mississippiensis embryos would preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> during a severe acute respiratory acidosis. This hypothesis was tested by exposing embryos to a severe acute respiratory metabolic acidosis to examine the impact of this exposure on blood and tissue acid-base status to gain insight into the pattern of pH regulation in embryonic crocodilians and determine whether preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may be a general trait of  $CO_2$  tolerant reptilian embryos.

96

### 5.2 Methods

### 5.2.1 Subjects of study

Alligator mississippiensis embryos were collected from the Rockefeller Wildlife Refuge at Grand Chenier, LA, USA and transported to the laboratory at the University of North Texas. Embryos were staged to determine approximate age of each clutch (72 d total incubation period at 30°C) and were incubated at 30°C in a walk-in incubator ensuring all embryos developed as female. All embryos were placed in plastic containers and placed in a bed of moist vermiculite mixed in a 1:1 ratio of vermiculite to water. Water content of vermiculite was maintained by weighing the box twice weekly and adding water as needed to keep the mass constant.

### 5.2.2 Surgical procedures

Embryos were removed from the incubation chamber and candled to identify a tertiary chorioallantoic membrane (CAM) artery. They were then placed in a temperature-controlled surgical chamber (30°C) under normoxic/normocarbic conditions and  $\sim 1 \text{ cm}^2$  of the eggshell was removed under a dissection microscope (Leica MZ6 Leica Microsystems, Waukegan, IL). A tertiary CAM artery was isolated for arterial pressure monitoring and blood sampling. An occlusive catheter was inserted into the vessel using heat-pulled, heparinized, and saline-filled PE-50 tubing, as previously described (Crossley and Altimiras, 2005). The surgical preparations were minimally invasive and no anesthesia/analgesia is required; the entire surgical procedure took 7-10 minutes. Following catheterization, the catheter was fixed to the shell with cyanoacrylic glue and the embryo was placed in a water-jacketed multi-chamber experimental unit  $(\sim 700 \text{ cm}^3 \text{ per chamber}, \text{ one embryo per chamber})$  and allowed to acclimate for at least 60 minutes. Temperature in the chambers was maintained at 30°C with a circulating water bath (VWR International, LLC, West Chester, PA, USA). Each chamber consisted of a container fitted with a lid with three ports that allowed the catheter and airlines to enter the chamber. To prevent changes in chamber temperature due to incoming air flow, all incoming gas traversed a 1 m copper line submerged within the constant temperature circulator's water bath. Air was forced into each chamber at a flow of 200 ml min<sup>-1</sup>. Each arterial catheter was attached to a pressure transducer 1-3 cm above the egg via salinefilled PE50 tubing, connected to an amplifier, and the pressure signal acquired at 40 Hz using PowerLab data recording system (ADInstruments, CO, USA) connected to a computer running ChartPro software (v 7.4 ADInstruments CO, USA). Pressure transducers were calibrated prior to each measurement period with a vertical column of saline, and heart rate was determined with a software tachograph that integrated the arterial pressure trace. Cardiovascular measurements were made to quantify cardiovascular changes during acid-base challenge.

### 5.2.3 Experimental treatment and physiological measurements

Embryos reared in normocarbic/normoxic (0.03 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, 21 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; air) were removed at 70% of incubation and subjected to either 1 h exposure to air or hypercarbic hypoxia (13 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> and 9 kPa PO<sub>2</sub>; H13). This treatment was chosen as previously it has been shown to induce a sufficiently severe acidosis (Andrewartha et al., 2014), allowing for the determination of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (Shartau et al., 2016b); the exposure time of 1 h was chosen as pHe and pHi typically reach maximal depression at that point (Baker et al., 2009a). The conditions for H13 were generated using compressed O<sub>2</sub>, CO<sub>2</sub>, and N<sub>2</sub> regulated with mass flow controllers for nitrogen, oxygen and carbon dioxide (GFC Aalborg; Orangeburg, NY, USA) regulated with a command module (Model SDPROC, Aalborg; Orangeburg, NY, USA) to achieve the desired gas mix. O<sub>2</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> levels were monitored with analyzers (S-A/I and CD-3A, respectively; Ametek Applied Electrochemistry, IL, USA). Gas composition in the chamber changed within 60-120 seconds. Following exposure two aliquots of blood, approximately 150-300 µL, were sampled from the CAM artery by disconnecting the pressure catheter with blood passively flow into a 1 mL heparinized syringe. Blood pH (pHe; model BMS 3 MK 2; Radiometer) and total CO<sub>2</sub> (TCO<sub>2</sub>) (model 965 Analyzer; Corning) were measured immediately using the first aliquot and the second aliquot was centrifuged (3 min at 10,000 rpm), plasma removed and red cells frozen for later analysis of pH<sub>i</sub>. Embryos were then euthanized with an overdose of sodium pentobarbital  $(100 \text{ mg kg}^{-1})$  injected into the CAM artery. Tissues (heart, brain, liver, white muscle and kidney) were then quickly dissected (within 5 min), placed in micro-centrifuge tubes, frozen in liquid

nitrogen and stored at -80°C for later measurements of pH<sub>i</sub>. Tissue was later ground under liquid nitrogen and pH<sub>i</sub> was measured using the metabolic inhibitor tissue homogenate method (MITH; see Appendix for detailed description of this method); this technique has been validated (Baker et al., 2009b; Portner et al., 1990) and has been previously used in reptiles (Galli and Richards, 2012; Shartau et al., 2016b). Red blood cell (RBC) pH<sub>i</sub> was measured using the freeze-thaw technique (Baker et al., 2009a).

### 5.2.4 Calculations and statistical analyses

Plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] and *P*CO<sub>2</sub> were calculated using measured TCO<sub>2</sub> and pH values as previously described by Brauner et al. (2004). The CO<sub>2</sub> solubility coefficient and pKa were calculated using equations from Heisler (1984) which were adapted, and experimentally validated, for use with reptile blood (Stabenau and Heming, 1993). Comparison of acid-base changes between control and treatment were conducted using both pH and proton concentration ([H<sup>+</sup>]); this was done to mitigate concern regarding the perceived problem of using pH, a logarithmic value, in statistical analyses (Boutilier and Shelton, 1980). [H<sup>+</sup>] was calculated from individually measured pH values ([H<sup>+</sup>]=10<sup>-pH</sup>) and plotted as mean  $\pm$  s.e.m.

All data was analyzed using GraphPad Prism v5.0 (GraphPad Software Inc., 2007). Differences between the acid-base parameters of air and H13 exposed groups were compared using a two-sample t-test (P < 0.05). Mean arterial pressure (kPa) and mean heart rate (beats min<sup>-1</sup>) were calculated from the individual mean values for embryos in each exposure group and were based on stable individual mean values for 45 min during the exposure period. Absolute blood pressure was corrected for the pressure transducer's distance above the egg. Mean blood pressure and heart rate were compared using a two-sample t-test (P < 0.05). All values are presented as mean  $\pm$  s.e.m.; sample sizes are N=6-7 except for RBC where N=5.

### 5.3 Results and discussion

Alligator mississippiensis embryos preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> despite a reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> during a severe acute respiratory metabolic acidosis. Following 1 h exposure to H13, blood PCO<sub>2</sub> increased from  $3.3 \pm 0.5$  to  $8.6 \pm 1.0$  kPa PCO<sub>2</sub>, which was accompanied by a large reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> from  $7.516 \pm 0.027$  to  $7.010 \pm 0.019$ ; blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] did not differ (Fig. 5.1A). Despite pH<sub>e</sub> being reduced by 0.506 pH units, pH<sub>i</sub> of tissues was not reduced; heart and brain pH<sub>i</sub> increased (6.346 ± 0.051 to 6.572 ± 0.066 and  $6.512 \pm 0.046$  to  $6.693 \pm 0.061$  pH units, respectively) (Fig. 5.1B), while no change in pH<sub>i</sub> of liver, white muscle, or kidney were observed (Fig. 5.1C).

As pH is a measure of  $[H^+]$ , the changes in  $[H^+]$  of blood and tissues following this acidosis reflected those of pH. Blood  $[H^+]$  increased from  $30.9 \pm 1.9$  to  $80.1 \pm 3.3$ nM, which was accompanied by reductions in  $[H^+]$  of heart and brain (Fig. 5.1D); no change in  $[H^+]$  of liver, white muscle or kidney occurred (Fig. 5.1E). Using  $[H^+]$  did not yield different statistical conclusions compared to using pH and thus indicate that despite the logarithmic nature of pH, use of pH should not be an issue in these analyses. This is corroborated by Boutilier and Shelton who conclude that the use of pH is as valid of that of  $[H^+]$  for statistical analysis; they suggest this conclusion is applicable to all vertebrates that have fairly precise pH (or  $[H^+]$ ) regulation (Boutilier and Shelton, 1980). Our calculations, along with Boutilier and Shelton (1980), provide additional reassurance regarding the acceptability of using pH in statistical analyses in this study, and others.

Exposure to elevated  $CO_2$  was expected to reduce  $pH_e$ , however, a pure respiratory acidosis would be associated with an increase in plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] along the blood buffer line from 19.5 mM to 26.4 mM based on a blood buffer value of -16 mM HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> pH unit<sup>-1</sup> from chicken embryos (Burggren et al., 2012) (Fig. 5.1A). That [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] is well below the blood buffer line is indicative of net acid excretion from the intracellular to the extracellular compartment and is a characteristic of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (Harter et al., 2014; Shartau et al., 2016a). The RBC were the only tissue to exhibit a reduction of pH<sub>i</sub> which is a common trait among fish that preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> (Harter et al., 2014). While clearly the RBCs do not actively regulate pH<sub>i</sub> in the way that other tissues do, they have a tissue buffer value similar to tissues such as the heart and brain (Wood and LeMoigne, 1991) and thus inform on the reduction in pH<sub>i</sub> that might be expected in tissues lacking the capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (Harter et al., 2014). Differences amongst tissues for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may reflect varying capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation; this may be tissue specific or reflect differential organ maturation at 70% of incubation (Shartau et al., 2016b).

The capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may depend on the relative importance of the respective tissue to the physiology of the embryo at this developmental stage. For example, the capacity of heart to regulate its pH<sub>i</sub> may underlie the constant blood pressure and heart rate (0.65 ± 0.05 kPa and 69.5 ± 6.3 beats min<sup>-1</sup>, respectively;) during acute H13 exposure. Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in the heart is also likely responsible for maintaining cardiac function in embryonic *C. serpentina* during acute hypercarbia hypoxia at 70% of incubation but at 90% of incubation cardiac function was reduced (Shartau et al., 2016b). Similarly, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is suggested to preserve cardiac performance in adult white sturgeon (Baker et al., 2011) and armoured catfish (Hanson et al., 2009) during exposure up to 3 and 5 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, respectively; however, beyond those CO<sub>2</sub> tensions those fishes exhibited modest reduction in cardiac performance. The ability of *A. mississippiensis* embryos to protect (and elevate) pH<sub>i</sub> while preserving cardiac function at this developmental stage, suggests they possess a robust capacity to tolerate this respiratory metabolic acidosis, and that the impact on whole embryo performance, at least acutely, is minimal.

In white sturgeon, *P*CO<sub>2</sub> tensions greater than 6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> are also associated with a reduction in metabolic rate while still preferentially regulating pH<sub>i</sub> (Baker and Brauner, 2012). Other studies have shown metabolic depression in response to hypercarbia-induced respiratory acidosis (Baker and Brauner, 2012; Michaelidis et al., 2005; Stapp et al., 2015) and that the response, including protein synthesis, differs between tissues and organisms (Stapp et al., 2015). During hypercarbia in the peanut worm (*Sipunculus nudus*), there is a metabolic depression which is associated with a shift to less ATP costly ion-transporters which allow for compensation of the accompanying intracellular acidosis (Portner et al., 1998; Portner et al., 2000). Given the differential response of pH<sub>i</sub> in *A. mississippiensis* embryos in response to hypercarbia hypoxia, it may be that tissues are affected differently by the extracellular acidosis. The protection of pH<sub>i</sub>

may be reflected in the relative ability to shift to the optimal acid-base ion transporters, such that the most acid sensitive tissues such as brain and heart, possess the greatest capacity for this and thus exhibit the most robust capacity for  $pH_i$  regulation against reduction in  $pH_e$ .

Embryonic *A. mississippiensis*, like embryonic turtles in Chapter 4, were subjected to both respiratory and metabolic acidosis as a consequence of hypercarbia and hypoxia, respectively. As hypoxia leads to anaerobic metabolism and the increased production of lactate, this may have affected tissues differently. While lactate concentration was not measured, exposure of similar stage embryonic chickens to 1 h hypercarbia hypoxia resulted in a pH<sub>e</sub> reduction of ~0.8 pH unit and increase in blood lactate from 0.8 to 14 mM (Andrewartha et al., 2014), intracellular pH or lactate were not measured so it is not known how the tissues responded but they likely experienced large pH<sub>i</sub> reduction and lactate increase. The response of pH<sub>i</sub> to hypercarbia or hypoxia alone in amniote embryos are unknown; consequently, the possible differences between them on pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> should be considered.

Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation likely confers the CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance exhibited by *A*. *mississippiensis* embryos, which may enhance embryonic survival by allowing them to tolerate acid-base disturbances in an environment that is not favorable to net acid excretion. The ability of *C. serpentina* and *A. mississippiensis* embryos to preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub>, species where adults use coupled pH regulation (Shartau et al., 2016a; Wasser et al., 1991), suggests the pattern of acid-base regulation is modified during reptilian development. Compared to older embryos and post-hatch animals, the capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in turtles appears to be the greatest at 70% of incubation (Fig. 5.2). The differential ability of embryos and post-hatch reptiles to regulate pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> (only pH<sub>i</sub> for brain and muscle are shown) following an acute acidosis is shown in Figure 2. Although pH<sub>e</sub> is consistently reduced, pH<sub>i</sub> is well regulated in 70% of incubation embryos, but in post-hatch turtles (*C. serpentina* and *C. picta bellii*) and lizards (*A. equestris* and *D. dorsalis*), pH<sub>i</sub> is reduced.

These results show that embryonic *A. mississippiensis* fully protect  $pH_i$  against severe reduction in  $pH_e$  during hypercarbia hypoxia, corroborating results in turtle (Shartau et al., 2016b), further demonstrating that preferential  $pH_i$  regulation occurs in

reptilian embryos; a strategy of acid-base regulation that has only been identified in a few adult anamniotes vertebrates (Shartau et al., 2016a). Although more work is needed to support the hypothesis recently proposed by Shartau et al. (2016a) that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is an embryonic strategy of acid-base regulation in vertebrates, these findings in *A. mississippiensis* provide the second example of this strategy in an embryonic reptile, and the first in a crocodilian. Further studies are required to assess whether *A. mississippiensis* embryos exhibit a similar transition from preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation to coupled pH regulation like that in turtles, and whether this strategy of acid-base regulation manifests in non-reptilian embryonic vertebrates.



Figure 5.1: Effect of exposure to an acute respiratory acidosis in *Alligator mississippiensis* embryos on blood and tissue acid-base status. Blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>), blood [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] are presented on a pH-HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> plot. Embryos at 70% of incubation were sampled in air or following a 1 h hypercarbic hypoxia (13 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, 9 kPa *P*O<sub>2</sub>: H13) exposure; curved lines represent *P*CO<sub>2</sub> isopleths and dashed line represents the non-bicarbonate blood buffer value (adapted from Burggren et al., 2012) (A). Relationship between blood pH (extracellular pH [pH<sub>e</sub>]) and tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) (B, C) or relationship between in air or blood proton concentration [H<sup>+</sup>] (nM) and tissue [H<sup>+</sup>] (D, E) following 1 h exposure to H13. Brain (•), liver (▲) and heart (■) (B, D), and red blood cells (RBC, ▼), white muscle (WM, ■) and kidney (◆) (C, E). Values are presented as means ± s.e.m. Symbols (\*, +) indicate significant differences (P<0.05) between air (open symbols) and H13 (closed symbols) treatment for pH or [H<sup>+</sup>] (\*) and blood HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> (+).



Figure 5.2: Difference in blood pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) and tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) during development following a respiratory acidosis in embryonic *Alligator mississippiensis* (American alligator; 70% to hatch) and *Chelydra serpentina* (snapping turtle; 70 and 90% to hatch), and in post-hatch *C. serpentina*, *Chrysemys picta bellii* (western painted turtle), *Anolis equestris* (knight anole) and *Dipsosaurus dorsalis* (desert iguana). Control pH values for pH<sub>e</sub> (open bar), and pH<sub>i</sub> of brain (black bar) and muscle (grey bar) were subtracted from the values determined following either 1 h exposure to 13 kPa  $PCO_2$ , 9 kPa  $PO_2$  in *A. mississippiensis* (this study) and *C. serpentina* (Chapter 4), or 1 h dive which increased arterial  $PCO_2$  to 6.5 kPa in *C. picta bellii* (Wasser et al., 1991), or 1 h exposure to 5 kPa  $PCO_2$  in *A. equestris* and *D. dorsalis* (Snyder et al., 1995). Differences are shown as means only to visualize the changes across developmental ages. Values that are  $\geq 0$  are representative of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation while those that are <0 indicate a net acidosis.

## **Chapter 6: General Discussion and Conclusions**

The objective of my thesis was to investigate the usage, distribution/prevalence, and origin of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as a strategy of acid-base regulation in vertebrates. This objective was addressed by investigating how adult fishes and embryonic amniotes respond to severe acute acid-base disturbances. Chapter 2 suggests that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is not used by all tissues to protect against all types of acidosis in white sturgeon. Chapter 3 indicates that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation occurs in many fish species and in numerous fish phylogenetic groups in response to severe acute hypercarbia. Finally, Chapters 4 and 5 demonstrate that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation occurs in reptile embryos and may be lost in adults. Together, these results demonstrate that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a widely used strategy of acid-base regulation amongst vertebrates in response to severe acute hypercarbia. Additionally, it may be an embryonic strategy that is either retained or lost in adults, and that differences exist in the degree of pH<sub>i</sub> protection between the tissues in response to an acid-base disturbance, and differences in pH<sub>i</sub> regulation occur between different types of acute acid-base disturbances.

This General Discussion will examine preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as a distinct pattern of acid-base regulation compared to the more familiar/traditional strategy of coupled pH<sub>e</sub>/pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. The significance of using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation will be explored, including how it may have played a critical function in a number of key transitions in vertebrate evolution.

### 6.1 Thesis overview and major contributions

Chapter 2 investigated whether preferential  $pH_i$  regulation is a general strategy of acid-base regulation in response to different types of acidoses. The goal of this chapter was to determine if preferential  $pH_i$  regulation could be assessed in fishes using various acid-base challenges such as exhaustive exercise, in addition to hypercarbia where it has

been observed previously (Baker et al., 2009a). If different acidoses can be used to demonstrate the presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, this would allow for the use of acid-base exposures other than hypercarbia (e.g. exhaustive exercise) to conduct the survey of presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in Chapter 3. Additionally, inference regarding the presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation from the literature could occur as most acid-base challenges are not conducted using hypercarbia. I hypothesized preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a general acid-base regulatory strategy in Acipenser transmontanus (white sturgeon). The results from Chapter 2 indicated that A. transmontanus, which preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> during hypercarbia, do not exhibit the same capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in all tissues during metabolic acidoses induced by anoxia, exhaustive exercise and air exposure. This suggests that response between acidoses varies and thus, metabolic acidoses may not indicate whether fishes possess the capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. These results help shape subsequent chapters by emphasizing the importance of consistently using the same type of acid-base disturbance (i.e. hypercarbia) to assess the presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation.

Chapter 3 investigated the presence or absence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in fishes. The objective of this chapter was to determine if preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is a common and widespread strategy of acid-base regulation amongst fishes as prior to this thesis preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation had only been observed in three fishes (*A. transmontanus, Pterygoplichthys pardalis, Synbranchus marmoratus*). I hypothesized that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation would occur in fishes tolerant of severe acute hypercarbia; this was supported by the results. Chapter 3 shows that an additional 15 fish species use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation; these fishes include water and air breathers, as well as tropical and temperate species (Table 6.1), and span numerous phylogenetic groups (Fig. 6.1). These findings represent a major contribution to understanding the distribution of acid-base regulatory strategies in fishes as preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation can now be considered relatively common (or at least, not rare) and broadly used.

As preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was demonstrated in Chapter 3 to be closely associated with tolerance to severe hypercarbia in adult fishes, I was interested in investigating whether this strategy might be used by amniotes, some of which are highly hypercarbia tolerant during embryonic development. Chapter 4 investigated the pattern of acid-base regulation during development of a hypercarbia tolerant amniote, *Chelydra serpentina* (common snapping turtle). I hypothesized that embryonic turtles would preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub>. Results from this chapter indicate that embryonic turtles preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> and that capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is reduced throughout development (Fig. 6.2). These findings are highly significant as they demonstrate for the first time that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation occurs in an amniote, and that the pattern of acid-base regulation changes throughout ontogeny. This suggests that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may be an embryonic pattern of acid-base regulation and that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may be retained or lost in adults.

Chapter 5 investigated acid-base regulation in another hypercarbia tolerant amniote, *Alligator mississippiensis* (American alligator), to see if I could corroborate findings from Chapter 4; i.e. whether other amniote embryos use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. As alligator embryos are hypercarbia tolerant, I hypothesized that embryos will preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub>; this is supported by the results. The importance of this finding is that it demonstrates preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation occurs during development in another, distantly related, amniote species, which further strengthens support for the hypothesis that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is an embryonic pattern of acid-base regulation. Together, these chapters greatly expand the understanding of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as strategy of acid-base regulation that provides exceptional pH<sub>i</sub> protection during hypercarbia-induced respiratory acidoses in a large number of diverse fishes, and may represent an embryonic strategy as indicated by its use in embryonic amniotes.

# 6.2 Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation: A common and distinct pattern of acid-base regulation

Before this dissertation, preferential  $pH_i$  regulation was considered to be a novel and rare pattern of acid-base regulation (Fig. 1.4) (Fig. 1.4; Brauner and Baker, 2009; Brauner et al., 2004); however, based upon my findings in this thesis, this does not appear to be the case. The findings in Chapter 4 and 5 that preferential  $pH_i$  regulation is used by developing amniotes was intriguing but perhaps is expected given the putative limitations embryos face during development. While the mechanisms remain yet to be uncovered, use of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation allows embryos to compensate for acid–base challenges to pH<sub>i</sub>, despite the incomplete formation of the extracellular compartment and associated structures (e.g. cardiovascular, respiratory, and renal systems) that are required for coupled pH regulation.

Embryos may also experience additional challenges due to encapsulation within extra-embryonic structures (e.g. eggshells or egg capsules) (Goldberg et al., 2008; Tazawa, 1980). These structures typically permit the perfusion of  $O_2$  and  $CO_2$  but create diffusion gradients (Ciuhandu et al., 2007; Goldberg et al., 2008; Tazawa, 1980); additionally, in the aquatic, but not terrestrial environment, limited exchange of ions may occur (Alderdice, 1988; Everaert et al., 2011) depending on the permeability of the specific extra-embryonic structure. Reduced exchange of gases and acid-base ion equivalents with the external environment may putatively limit the ability of encapsulated embryos to use coupled pH regulation (Erasmus et al., 1971). The results in Chapters 4 and 5, along with the physical limitations posed by encapsulation, led me to hypothesize that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may represent the basal pattern of acid–base regulation in vertebrates as an acid-base regulatory strategy during development, with adults either retaining or losing this trait. Thus, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may in fact be ubiquitous amongst vertebrates (and possibly invertebrates, which can face many of the same challenges as vertebrates) (e.g. Kikkawa et al., 2008; Portner et al., 1998; Spicer et al., 2007; Spicer et al., 2011). Further studies should examine other embryos at various developmental stages to 1) assess how they respond to acid-base challenges, 2) determine at which developmental stage preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is lost, and 3) assess the role of encapsulation on the pattern of acid-base regulation (e.g. compare encapsulated and freeswimming embryos).

If preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is an embryonic trait, then the occurrence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in adult species may represent the retention of the embryonic trait; whereas, species exhibiting only coupled pH regulation would imply the loss of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and the acquisition of coupled pH regulation, which may represent a derived strategy of acid-base regulation. In comparison to the start of this

thesis (Fig. 1.4), the number of species identified to use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has increased greatly, which represents a fundamental shift in the quantity and phylogenetic distribution of species using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Based upon my work (in collaboration with others) preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has been identified for the first time in adult lamprey (*Entosphenus tridentatus*), elasmobranchs (e.g. *Potamotrygon* spp.), basal sarcopterygians (e.g. *Lepidosiren paradoxa*), and numerous additional species have been included in groups where only a single species had previously been known to use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (e.g. basal actinopterygians, Siluriformes, Perciformes). The diversity of these species includes tropical, subtropical and temperate species; additionally, there is a mix of water and bimodal breathers (Table 6.1). This suggests preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is not restricted to a particular taxonomic group, geographic area or mode of respiration, and it may be that the physical characteristics of the environment are strong selectors for this pattern of acid-base regulation.

As preferential  $pH_i$  regulation was believed to be a rare strategy at the start of this thesis. I specifically targeted fishes that would likely live in high CO<sub>2</sub> environments as they would be more likely to use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation; this approach likely created a bias towards identifying species that preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> compared to those using coupled pH regulation in Chapter 3. All the fishes sampled here primarily reside in freshwater, which is likely the more challenging environment for acid-base regulation compared to marine environments, due to the greater likelihood of severe hypercarbia (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Furch and Junk, 1997; McNeil and Sasse, 2016; Raymond et al., 2013). If marine fishes were sampled, it is likely this would include many coupled pH regulators as the marine environment is typically more stable and the availability of acidbase relevant counter ions for pHe regulation would allow for the loss of preferential pHi regulation as coupled pH regulation would be feasible. However, some marine environments may pose challenges for acid-base regulation, such as the intertidal zone (Richards, 2011) and near deep-sea  $CO_2$  vents (Ishimatsu et al., 2008); these could be environments that select for the retention of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in adults. Despite that my selection of species likely underrepresented the prevalence of coupled pH regulation, that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was identified in so many species was

unexpected and represent an important finding demonstrating that it is relatively common and widespread among fishes.

The putative retention of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in many adult vertebrates is likely influenced by the environment. Many adult fishes using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation inhabit environments characterized by challenging conditions for acid-base regulation. For example, Amazonian fishes (e.g. Colossoma macropomum) live in ion-poor waters with naturally low pH that experience large fluctuations in water PCO<sub>2</sub> and PO<sub>2</sub> (Pinardi et al., 2014; Val et al., 2005). Using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may be the only viable solution to the acid-base challenges associated with these environments; particularly under conditions such as severe acute hypercarbia, it is highly unlikely that compensation of pH<sub>e</sub> could occur. Conversely, the putative loss of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in some adult vertebrates may reflect the fact that they inhabit environments where pH<sub>e</sub> can be sufficiently regulated. For example, fishes such as Atlantic cod and rainbow trout typically reside in normocarbic, normoxic waters with sufficient ions for acid-base relevant ion exchange that allow them to easily compensate pH<sub>e</sub> during the acid-base challenges they may experience. Similarly, adult amniotes (e.g. turtles and alligators), which are terrestrial air breathers, are able to adjust air convection requirements to compensate for an acid-base disturbance. While the direct involvement of the environment in influencing the pattern of acid-base regulation has not been thoroughly assessed, some work on this has been conducted. Environmental influences on acid-base regulation have been implicated in O. mykiss exposed to hypercarbia in waters containing different ionic composition which resulted in large differences in the degree and speed of pHe compensation (Larsen and Jensen, 1997). In Pangasianodon hypophthalmus exposed to hypercarbia, they were observed to preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> but also compensate pH<sub>e</sub> in unaltered pond water; however, when placed in hypercarbia in pond water with artificially lowered pH, they only regulated pH<sub>i</sub> and not pH<sub>e</sub> (R.B.S., M. Sackville, C. Damsgaard, L.M. Phuong, M. Hvas, T. Wang, M. Bayley, D.T.T. Huong, N.T. Phuong, and C.J.B., unpublished observations and reviewed in Shartau et al., 2016a); this is consistent with the idea of environmental influence on the pattern of acid-base regulation. This indicates that patterns of pH regulation are not fixed, and that animals can switch between coupled pH regulation and preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, and that pH<sub>e</sub> regulation is

vulnerable to changes in environmental parameters. Whether patterns of pH regulation are fixed/determined or if animals can switch between coupled pH regulation and preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is unknown, but it does appear that pH<sub>e</sub> regulation itself is vulnerable to environmental changes.

### 6.2.1 Inter- and intra-specific variation of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

Amongst preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulators, the capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is not uniform. While Chapter 2 demonstrated that A. transmontanus do not protect all tissues against metabolic acidoses (Shartau et al., 2017a), a similar study on *P. pardalis* indicated that preferential  $pH_i$  regulation is a general strategy as they protected  $pH_i$ following exhaustive exercise, anoxia and metabolic alkalosis (Harter et al., 2014). As both A. transmontanus and P. pardalis exhibit tremendous pH<sub>i</sub> protection during hypercarbia it is unclear as to why the former has less control over pH<sub>i</sub> during metabolic acidoses; however, it may be associated with differences in their capacity for  $pH_e$ regulation. Unlike A. transmontanus, P. pardalis appear to have little to no capacity for  $pH_e$  regulation, as evident from the near complete lack of  $pH_e$  compensation at all  $PCO_2$ exposures over 24-96 h, including at *ca*. 1 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> (Brauner et al., 2004); A. transmontanus can fully compensate pH<sub>e</sub> while preferentially regulating pH<sub>i</sub> at 1.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> (Baker et al., 2009a). Thus, tissues in P. pardalis may possess a more robust capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation to deal with the lack of any pH<sub>e</sub> compensation, which could be further underlined by the need to respond to naturally occurring severe acid-base challenges.

The capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation varies between tissues, and different species exhibit different degrees of variability in those tissues. In some species that use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, the degree of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation varies between tissues, for example, *L. oculatus* exposed to 6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> exhibit a significant increase in heart pH<sub>i</sub> but no pH change in other tissues (Fig. 3.2B); however, *Atractosteus spatula* exposed to 6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> exhibit a significant increase in liver pH<sub>i</sub> but no pH change in other tissues (Fig. 3.2C). While most tissues amongst pH<sub>i</sub> preferentially regulating species remain unchanged during hypercarbia, Figure 3.2 demonstrates the variation amongst species and tissues. The reason for this variation is not known but it could indicate that those tissues which are becoming alkalotic relative to normocarbia possess a greater capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and/or that those tissues err on the side of pH<sub>i</sub> overcompensation. Conversely, that other tissues do not experience pH<sub>i</sub> change during hypercarbia could indicate that they have a greater capacity to tightly maintain intracellular pH homeostasis, which could be the optimal strategy to avoid intracellular disruption. Another possibility is that differences in pH<sub>i</sub> regulation amongst tissues reflect animals prioritizing some tissues over others, which may occur if pH<sub>i</sub> regulation becomes more challenging as blood acidity increases. In this situation, less critical tissues (e.g. muscle) may be less tightly regulated to avoid exacerbating the pH<sub>e</sub> reduction to ensure pH<sub>i</sub> of critical tissues (e.g. brain) can be well protected.

These differences in pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may reflect differences in cellular mechanisms between tissues. As pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is likely nearly instantaneous, based on the *A*. *transmontanus* heart pH<sub>i</sub> response to hypercarbia (Baker, 2010; Shartau et al., 2016a), it is likely that the cellular transporters involved in acid-base regulation are present in the plasma membrane. Transporters could increase in activity as pH<sub>i</sub> deviates from the transporter's pH set point, thus triggering pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Indeed, in mammalian cells, increased activation of acid-base transporters such as NHEs and MCTs occurs when pH moves away from the pH set point of steady state pH levels and restoration of pH<sub>i</sub> is initiated (Demaurex, 2002; McBrian et al., 2013; Schapiro and Grinstein, 2000; Tokudome et al., 1990). The cellular and molecular mechanism of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation remain unknown and thus this remains an important area of future research on this topic.

# 6.3 Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation: A potential developmental and evolutionary strategy to cope with acute acid–base disturbances

Preferential  $pH_i$  regulation may be the embryonic strategy of acid-base regulation as it allows embryos to protect their cells and tissues without relying on pH regulation of the external medium (i.e.  $pH_e$ ); this may be particularly important during severe acid-base disturbances. Retention or loss of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation in adulthood may due to

environmental and physiological factors as use of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in more challenging environments is likely to enhance survival; however, many vertebrates appear to lose the capacity for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation and acquire coupled pH regulation. The reason for the loss of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is not understood. Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation offers exceptional tolerance to severe acute respiratory acidbase disturbances and does not appear to be metabolically costly at the whole animal level during severe hypercarbia exposure (Baker and Brauner, 2012); however, the putative advantages of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation may not apply uniformly to metabolic acidoses (Shartau et al., 2017a) and it is not known how well preferential  $pH_i$  regulation functions during chronic acid-base disturbances. Furthermore, although the metabolic cost of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation has been determined to be low, this was only investigated A. transmontanus (Baker and Brauner, 2012); it is not known if this applies to other species. Additionally, there may be costs not yet determined or quantified with having a greater imbalance in pH between the extracellular and intracellular compartments; these could be related to disruption of membrane proteins affecting cellular function.

#### 6.3.1 Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation: An exaptation for vertebrate evolution?

Vertebrates are believed to have had a marine origin (Carrete Vega and Wiens, 2012; Halstead, 1985); the marine environment is generally characterized by being relatively stable with respect to *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, *P*O<sub>2</sub>, and temperature (compared to freshwater), which may limit the occurrence of severe environmental acid-base disturbances. Additionally, marine environments are ion-rich, which may have facilitated the use of coupled pH regulation during acid-base challenges; use of this strategy is observed in a basal marine vertebrate, the *Eptatretus stoutii* (Pacific hagfish), an osmo- and iono-conformer, which compensates pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub> during a hypercarbic-induced respiratory acidosis (Baker et al., 2015), as well as marine elasmobranches and teleosts (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau et al., 2016a; Wood et al., 1990). The transition of vertebrates from marine to ion-poor fresh water likely posed a challenge for acid-base regulation due to the reduced availability of counter-ions for coupled pH regulation. Consequently, the transition to freshwater may have led to the broader retention of preferential pH<sub>i</sub>

regulation in adults. This transition likely occurred approximately 420-430 million years ago in the late Silurian (Halstead, 1985) by the ancestors of the basal euteleostom fishes where global average temperature and atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> tensions were higher than present day levels (Clack, 2007). These conditions may have resembled present day tropical systems, such as the Amazon River, which have warm, ion-poor, CO<sub>2</sub>-rich waters (Furch and Junk, 1997) and may have promoted the retention of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation to maintain acid-base homeostasis; thus, protecting against acid-base disturbances that would otherwise be intolerable if relying on coupled pH regulation (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau and Brauner, 2014).

As fishes colonized tropical freshwater environments, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may have been beneficial when encountering severe hypercarbic conditions present in many of these habitats (Furch and Junk, 1997; Heisler, 1984; Li et al., 2013; Ultsch, 1987). Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation confers exceptional CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance in nearly all species investigated in this thesis (Chapter 3) and  $CO_2$  tolerance in these environments may be important as hypercarbia is often associated with aquatic hypoxia (Ultsch, 1987); the latter of which is believed to be the primary driver of the evolution of air breathing in fishes (Graham, 1997; Randall et al., 1981). As fishes developed the capacity for air breathing, and became bimodal breathers, the retention of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may provide a means to cope with acid-base challenges associated with air breathing (Shartau and Brauner, 2014). Bimodal breathing fishes take up O<sub>2</sub> from water or air, but typically excrete the majority of  $CO_2$  to the water as the capacitance of water for  $CO_2$  is much greater than air (Graham, 1997; Randall et al., 1981). Consequently, in bimodal breathing fishes, air breathing leads to a rapid increase in blood PCO<sub>2</sub>, as CO<sub>2</sub> excretion rates at the gills are reduced due to emersion or reduced gill blood flow and/or gill ventilation. Depending on the species and conditions, blood  $PCO_2$  can increase to >3 kPa  $PCO_2$ during an air-breathing episode causing a reduction in pH<sub>e</sub> (Shartau and Brauner, 2014). Air-breathing in fishes is thought to have evolved in tropical environments that likely experience both hypoxia and hypercapnia (Ultsch, 1987); thus, these fishes may have already been subjected to selection pressures to retain preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, which could then serve as an exaptation for dealing with an air breathing induced respiratory acidosis (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau and Brauner, 2014).

The transition of vertebrates from water to land posed a number of physiological challenges due to the physical differences between the aquatic and terrestrial environments; one of these is acid-base regulation. Transitioning from an aquatic water breather to a terrestrial air breather involved changes in blood acid-base status as the former have low  $PCO_2$ , low plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>], and high pH<sub>e</sub>, while the latter have high  $PCO_2$ , high plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>], and low pH<sub>e</sub> (Randall et al., 1981; Ultsch, 1996). Additionally, acid-base regulation between the two differs in that water breathers rely on physicochemical buffering and net transport of acid-base equivalents, while air breathers depend mainly on changes in ventilation rate to alter  $PCO_2$  and thus pH (Brauner and Baker, 2009). Exactly how early vertebrates made this transition is not known but it is hypothesized that use of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may have played an important role in minimizing the effects of respiratory acidosis (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Shartau and Brauner, 2014; Shartau et al., 2016a).

Although early terrestrial vertebrates were semi-aquatic bimodal breathers, they still excreted the majority of  $CO_2$  into the water (Janis et al., 2012); therefore, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may have been important to deal with the respiratory acidosis associated with terrestrial excursion when venturing onto land, to forge, escape predation, or related to reproduction. As vertebrates became more dependent on air breathing (i.e. moved from being facultative to obligate air breathers), and terrestrial excursions became longer, the rise in blood  $PCO_2$  would have become greater, resulting in increasingly severe respiratory acidosis (Janis et al., 2012).

The increase in plasma [HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>] in air breathers may be due to increased renal HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> production and retention (Gonzalez et al., 2010). Additionally, it has been postulated that highly vascularized dermal bone was involved in providing HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> to buffer respiratory acidosis (Janis et al., 2012), which may have been used during the terrestrialization of tetrapods as bone and shell contribute to buffering acidosis associated with anoxia in reptiles (Jackson, 2003; Jackson et al., 2000a; Jackson et al., 2000b) and amphibians (Warren, 2005), but not in fish (Harter et al., 2014). Preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation may have acted as an important intermediate step protecting tissues during these transitory stages. Increased blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> would have made excretion of CO<sub>2</sub> into the air easier due to the large diffusion gradient; consequently, tight regulation of pH<sub>e</sub> would

be possible via control of ventilatory rate. Unlike water breathers where ventilatory rate is typically  $O_2$  dependent as  $O_2$  is often more limited in aquatic environments, terrestrial air breathers are typically not  $O_2$  limited; thus, control of ventilation is moderated by regulation of blood pH, which is adjusted by adjusting blood *P*CO<sub>2</sub> by changing air convection requirement (Cameron, 1989a). This, along with the use of the kidneys as the primary organ for acid-base regulation permits tetrapods to tightly control pH<sub>e</sub>, and thus maintain pH<sub>i</sub> homeostasis. These ideas are highly speculative but presently little is known about this transition in acid-base status.

### 6.4 Future research directions

This thesis has made a significant advancement to the area of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation; yet more work is needed to fully understand this pattern of acid-base regulation, and as such, many interesting areas remain to be examined. Some of the topics for future research I believe are worth investigating are described below.

### 6.4.1 Survey of fish species

With an estimated 32,000+ fish species (Nelson, 2006), investigating the strategy of acid-base regulation in even a fraction of these species would be a challenging task. However, it would be highly informative if a few additional species were examined, allowing for a better understanding of the diversity (or lack thereof) of acid-base regulatory strategies amongst fishes. While Chapter 3 attempted to include a diverse sample of species, there is still considerable room for improvement in order to gain a broader appreciation for how fishes regulate pH and to avoid overgeneralizing. As previously indicated, many of the species were selected to obtain a high success rate of identifying species using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation when I thought it was a relatively rare phenomenon. To obtain a more comprehensive understanding of the strategy of acid-base regulation amongst various groups it would be beneficial to include a few additional species and groups. This thesis has not investigated any marine fishes, it would be

informative to investigate basal and derived marine species, as well as air breathers. A couple of basal marine groups that should be examined in more detail include the Chondrichthyes and coelacanths. Few studies have investigated acid-base regulation in Chondrichthyes in response to severe pH disturbances and almost none have measured both pH<sub>e</sub> and pH<sub>i</sub>. The coelacanths are the only extant marine sarcopterygian fishes and thus would be fascinating based on their habitat and phylogenetic position (however, obtaining these fishes would be undoubtedly challenging and/or cost prohibitive). There are numerous marine air breathing fishes amongst the teleosts, ranging from the basal to derived including the Elopiformes (Megalops atlanticus Atlantic tarpon and M. cyprinoides ox eye herring), three families within the Salmoniformes (Umbridae, Lepidogalaxiidae, and Galaxiidae), sculpins in the order Scorpaeniformes (family Cottidae), and mudskippers in the order Perciformes (family Gobiidae) (Graham, 1997). Many of the species investigated in Chapter 3 are tropical or sub-tropical air breathers; one unique air breather that would be interesting to include in this survey would be the Arctic air breathing fish Dallia pectoralis (Alaska blackfish) (Lefevre et al., 2014). While the polar environment differs greatly from those in the tropics/sub-tropics, they are subjected to periods of hypoxia as lakes freeze and thus, may be exposed to acid-base challenges where preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation would be useful. These groups and species are not exhaustive in terms of which fishes might be worth investigating, but hopefully provide some idea where to continue this survey of acid-base regulation in fishes.

### 6.4.2 Acid-base regulation during development

Similar to the survey in Chapter 3, the discovery of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in embryonic amniotes in Chapters 4 and 5 warrant further investigations into other species. The work in Chapters 4 and 5 has resulted in a new hypothesis that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is an embryonic pattern of acid-base regulation that is either retained or lost in adults; however, additional work is needed to fully support this hypothesis and investigating acid-base regulation in other embryonic vertebrates are needed, including fishes, especially those using coupled pH regulation (e.g. *Oncorhynchus mykiss*). Among other vertebrates, embryonic chickens would be useful to examine as they are well studied with respect to changes in pH<sub>e</sub> during hypercarbia but nothing is known about how pH<sub>i</sub> is affected (Andrewartha et al., 2014; Burggren et al., 2012; Everaert et al., 2011; Mueller et al., 2014). Investigating a broad phylogenetic representation of amphibians, reptiles, birds, and mammals during development would be invaluable towards supporting (or refuting) this new hypothesis.

### 6.4.3 Chronic acid-base disturbances

This thesis has exclusively focused on acute acid-base challenges, yet chronic acid-base disturbances are common and it is largely unknown if preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation also protects against chronic disturbances. One study examined *Anguilla anguilla* (European eel) during a six-week exposure to hypercarbia at 2, 4 or 6 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> and found that despite pH<sub>e</sub> being only partially compensated at 6 weeks, pH<sub>i</sub> of heart and white muscle were protected (McKenzie et al., 2003). This suggests that *A. anguilla* preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> during chronic acid-base disturbances (the response during acute hypercarbia is not known in *A. anguilla*). As responses to acute and chronic acid-base disturbances can vary considerably in species using coupled pH regulation, as demonstrated by *O. mykiss* (Brauner and Baker, 2009; Smart et al., 1979). It would be valuable to understand if there are differences in capacity/ability for preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation between acute and chronic exposures by examining the acute (<48 h) and chronic (>4 weeks) acid-base disturbances.

### 6.4.4 Role of the environment

As indicated previously, it is hypothesized that the loss or retention of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation is determined by environmental and physiological factors. Results from *P*. *hypophthalmus* suggest that indeed, the environment may be associated with the ability of fishes to regulate  $pH_e$  and thus require them to use preferential  $pH_i$  regulation (R.B.S., M. Sackville, C. Damsgaard, L.M. Phuong, M. Hvas, T. Wang, M. Bayley, D.T.T. Huong, N.T. Phuong, and C.J.B., unpublished observations). It has been shown that rainbow trout  $pH_e$  regulation is dependent on environmental ion availability (Larsen and Jensen, 1997). Studies investigating the role of the environment on the pattern of acid-base regulation would be informative about the selective pressures for the putative retention of preferential  $pH_i$  regulation. Possible experiments could include examining  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$ 

changes in response to hypercarbia exposure in water with various ion composition, similar to Larsen and Jensen's study (Larsen and Jensen, 1997), with ionic concentrations ranging from ion-poor, such as found in the Rio Negro (Brauner et al., 2004), to that of typical hard water (Lecuyer, 2014). This could also include varying water pH as low water pH inhibits pH<sub>e</sub> regulation (Lin and Randall, 1995; Shartau et al., 2017b), which could promote preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. One particularly interesting study would be to see if *P. pardalis* are capable of pH<sub>e</sub> regulation if the optimal conditions are provided as their capacity for pH<sub>e</sub> compensation is extremely limited in their natural environment.

### 6.4.5 Mechanism(s) of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation

Lastly, one area that needs to be addressed is the molecular and cellular mechanisms of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation as nothing is presently known. This may be a challenging task given that different tissues have different responses (Shartau et al., 2017a), that there are differences between developmental stages (Shartau et al., 2016b), all of which may use different mechanisms. Additionally, while Huynh et al. indicated that cell culture approach may work for investigating the mechanism of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation, they also showed that the *in vitro* response differs from the *in vivo* response; possibly suggesting that extrinsic factors are involved (Huynh et al., 2011a). However, as preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation did occur *in vitro*, this may represent one possible approach. Another possible technique is to use tissue slices (e.g. liver) exposed to hypercarbia and treated with various pharmacological inhibitors to assess how pH<sub>i</sub> changes. This technique leaves cells in their extracellular matrix, allowing them to associate with each other and may be more natural than cell culture; this approach has been widely used in toxicology work in salmonids (Lemaire et al., 2011; Singh et al., 1996; Thohan et al., 2001). Regardless of the approach used, understanding the mechanisms will be important to fully understand how preferential pH<sub>i</sub> is regulated and how it functions in response to different types of acid-base disturbances and in different environments.

### 6.5 Summary and final thoughts

At the start of this dissertation, coupled pH regulation had been considered 'the' pattern of acid-base regulation for decades (Albers, 1970; Cameron, 1989b; Heisler, 1984; Occhipinti and Boron, 2015; Roos and Boron, 1981) and preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation was a novel and rare strategy of acid-base regulation limited to a mere four species: three fishes and one aquatic tetrapod. This dissertation provides evidence that preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is no longer a novel, nor rare strategy of acid-base regulation and thus may represent a paradigm shift regarding vertebrate acid-base regulation. Unexpectedly, preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation does not confer uniform protection for tissues against all types of acid-base disturbances, at least in white sturgeon (Chapter 2). However, my findings indicate that adults of at least an additional 15 species (Chapter 3) and embryos of two species (Chapters 4 and 5), use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during severe acute hypercarbia, which is an exciting expansion in the number of species exhibiting this strategy. The most interesting and surprising finding in this dissertation is that developing amniotes use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation (Chapters 4 and 5). The work in Chapters 3-5 required the original hypothesis of my thesis, that preferential  $pH_i$ regulation evolved in the ancestors of the basal euteleostomi, to be modified to: preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is an embryonic strategy that is either retained or lost in adults. The implication of this, which remains to be fully tested, is that all vertebrates use preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation at one point during their life history. The putative retention of this embryonic strategy of acid-base regulation may have been an exaptation for maintaining pH homeostasis as adults in challenging environments, including during the major evolutionary transition to air breathing and the transition from life in water to life on land.



Figure 6.1: Phylogeny showing the distribution of preferential intracellular pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) regulation and coupled pH regulation amongst vertebrates when exposed to acute >2 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> following completion of dissertation research. Species using preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during severe acute hypercarbia are indicated in pink, while those using coupled pH regulation are indicated in blue. This phylogeny builds on Figure 1.4 and includes species examined prior to, and during this dissertation. All species were examined during Chapter 3 with the exception of *L. osseus*, *O. bicirrhosum*, *P. hypophthalmus*, and *M. salmoides*. Data from *L. osseus*<sup>19</sup>, *O. bicirrhosum*<sup>20</sup>, and *M. salmoides*<sup>22</sup> is not included in this thesis due to limited n's from sampling; however, based on the CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance assay, they preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> and are included in this figure to further demonstrate the prevalence of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. Results from *P. hypophthalmus* are part of an unpublished project 21(R.B.S., M. Sackville, C. Damsgaard, L.M. Phuong, M. Hvas, T. Wang, M. Bayley, D.T.T. Huong, N.T. Phuong, C.J.B., unpublished). Other relevant references are indicated by numbers following species name - 1(Baker et al., 2015), 2(Wood et al., 1990), 3(Snyder and Nestler, 1991), 4(Heisler et al., 1982), 5(Wasser et al., 1991), 6(Snyder et al., 1995), 7(Snyder et al., 1995), 8(Malan et al., 1985), 9(Wood and Schaefer, 1978), 10(Gonzalez and Clancy, 1986a), 11(Yaksh and Anderson, 1987), 12(Arieff et al., 1976), 13(Baker et al., 2009a), 14(Brauner et al., 2004), 15(Wood and LeMoigne, 1991), 16(Larsen et al., 1997), 17(Wright et al., 1988), 18(Heisler, 1982). Phylogenetic relationships are based on (2009) and branch lengths are taken from various references utilizing fossil and molecular estimates of divergence times (Aschliman et al., 2012; Betancur-R et al., 2013; Betancur-R et al., 2015; Blair, 2005; Macqueen and Johnston, 2014; Meredith et al., 2011; Zhang et al., 2013); the phylogenetic tree was created using Mesquite (Maddison and Maddison, 2017).



Figure 6.2: Difference in tissue pH during development in turtles. Difference in tissue pH (pH<sub>i</sub>) during development is shown following exposure to hypercarbia relative to normocarbia in *Chelydra serpentina* [common snapping turtle; at 70% and 90% to hatch and in yearlings] and adult *Chrysemys picta bellii* (western painted turtles). Control pH values for pH<sub>i</sub> of heart (red circle), liver (yellow square), brain (blue triangle) and muscle (grey inverse triangle) were subtracted from the values determined following either 1 h exposure to 13 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>, 9 kPa *P*O<sub>2</sub> in *C. serpentina* or 1 h exposure to 6.5 kPa arterial *P*CO<sub>2</sub> in *C. picta bellii*. Values  $\geq$  0 in the light red portion of the figure are indicative of preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation while values  $\leq$  in the light blue portion of the figure are indicative of coupled pH regulation. This figure shows that turtles preferentially regulate pH<sub>i</sub> early in development and that the capacity for pH<sub>i</sub> regulation is reduced throughout development. Significant changes in pH<sub>i</sub> from control are indicated by asterisk (P<0.05); in all developmental stages extracellular pH (pH<sub>e</sub>) was significantly reduced during hypercarbia exposure (P<0.05).

Order	Family	Species	Pattern of acid-base regulation	Biogeographical realm <sup>1</sup>	Water/air breather
Petromyzontiformes	Petromyzontidae	Entosphenus tridentatus	ppHi	Nearctic	Water
Myliobatiformes	Potamotrygonidae	Potamotrygon sp.	ppHi	Neotropic	Water
Ceratodontiformes	Lepidosirenidae	Lepidosiren paradoxa	ppHi	Neotropic	Air
	Polydontidae	Polyodon spathula	ppHi	Nearctic	Water
Acipensernormes	Acipenseridae	Acipenser transmontanus <sup>2,3</sup>	ppHi	Nearctic	Water
Laisastaifarmas	Lepisosteidae	Lepisosteus oculatus	ppHi	Nearctic	Air
Leisostenonnes		Atractosteus spatula	ppHi	Nearctic	Air
Osteoglossiformes	Osteoglossidae	Arapaima gigas	ppHi	Neotropic	Air
Gymnotiformes	Gymnotidae	Electrophorus electricus	ppHi	Neotropic	Air
Characiformes	Serrasalmidae	Colossoma macropomum	ppHi	Neotropic	Water
Charachonnes	Characidae	Brycon amazonicus	ppHi	Neotropic	Water
	Callichthyidae	Hoplosternum littorale	ppHi	Neotropic	Air
	Loricariidae	Pterygoplichthys pardalis <sup>2,4</sup>	ppHi	Neotropic	Air
Siluriformes	Ictaluridae	Ictalurus punctatus	ppHi	Nearctic	Water
		I. punctatus X I. furcatus	ppHi	Nearctic	Water
	Pangasiidae	Pangasianodon hypophthalmus <sup>5</sup>	ррНі	Indomalayan	Air

### Table 6.1: Fish species investigated in this dissertation.

Order	Family	Species	Patteri acid-b regulat	n of Biogeographical ase realm <sup>1</sup> tion	Water/air breather
Salmoniformes	Salmonidae	Oncorhynchus kisutch	Coupled	Nearctic	Water
Sumomories	Sumondae	Oncorhynchus mykiss <sup>2,6</sup>	Coupled	Nearctic	Water
Synbranchiformes	Synbranchidae	Synbranchus marmoratus <sup>2,7</sup>	ppHi	Neotropic	Air
Perciformes	Cichlidae	Oreochromis niloticus	ppHi	Africotropical	Water
		Astronotus ocellatus	ppHi	Neotropic	Water

Taxonomic information for order and family are indicated, pattern of acid-base regulation (preferential pH<sub>i</sub> regulation – ppHi, or coupled pH regulation – coupled) as determined from Chapter 3 results are shown. Biogeographical realms are indicated in order to show that the survey included fishes from various regions. A mix of water and air breathers were used, this is indicated. All fishes were primarily freshwater or freshwater-brackish inhabitants. All fishes were examined as part of Chapter 3 unless otherwise stated, footnotes indicate applicable references.<sup>1</sup>(Udvardy, 1975), <sup>2</sup>Chapter 3, <sup>3</sup>(Baker et al., 2009a), <sup>4</sup>(Brauner et al., 2004), <sup>5</sup>(R.B.S., M. Sackville, C. Damsgaard, L.M. Phuong, M. Hvas, T. Wang, M. Bayley, D.T.T. Huong, N.T. Phuong, C.J.B., unpublished), <sup>6</sup>(Wood and LeMoigne, 1991), <sup>7</sup>(Heisler, 1982).

### References

- Aboagye, D. L. and Allen, P. J. (2014). Metabolic and locomotor responses of juvenile paddlefish *Polyodon spathula* to hypoxia and temperature. *Comp. Biochem. Phys. A* 169, 51–59.
- Aboagye, D. L. and Allen, P. J. (2017). Effects of acute and chronic hypoxia on acid–base regulation, hematology, ion, and osmoregulation of juvenile American paddlefish. *J. Comp. Physiol. B.* doi.org/10.1007/s00360-017-1104-7.
- Ackerman, R. A. (1977). The respiratory gas exchange of sea turtle nests (*Chelonia, Caretta*). *Respir. Physiol.* **31**, 19–38.
- **Ahmed, K. H.** (2006). Signalling pathways involved in hypertonicity- and acidification-induced activation of Na<sup>+</sup>/H<sup>+</sup> exchange in trout hepatocytes. *J. Exp. Biol.* **209**, 3101–3113.
- Albers, C. (1970). Acid-base balance. In *Fish Physiology* (eds. Hoar, W. S. and Randall, D. J., pp. 173–208. New York: Academic Press.
- Alderdice, D. F. (1988). Osmotic and ionic regulation in teleost eggs and larvae. In *Fish Physiology* (eds. Hoar, W. S. and Randall, D. J.), pp. 163–251. New York: Academic Press.
- Allen, P. J., Mitchell, Z. A., DeVries, R. J., Aboagye, D. L., Ciaramella, M. A., Ramee, S. W., Stewart, H. A. and Shartau, R. B. (2014). Salinity effects on Atlantic sturgeon (*Acipenser oxyrinchus oxyrinchus* Mitchill, 1815) growth and osmoregulation. J. Appl. Ichthyol. 30, 1229–1236.
- Andrewartha, S. J., Tazawa, H. and Burggren, W. W. (2014). Acute regulation of hematocrit and acid-base balance in chicken embryos in response to severe intrinsic hypercapnic hypoxia. *Respir. Physiol. Neurobiol.* **195C**, 1–10.
- Arieff, A. I., Kerian, A., Massry, S. G. and DeLima, J. (1976). Intracellular pH of brain: alterations in acute respiratory acidosis and alkalosis. *Am. J. Physiol.* 230, 804–812.
- Aschliman, N. C., Nishida, M., Miya, M. and Inoue, J. G. (2012). Body plan convergence in the evolution of skates and rays (Chondrichthyes: Batoidea). *Mol. Phylogen. Evol.* 63, 28-42.
- Atilla, N., McKinley, G. A., Bennington, V. and Baehr, M. (2011). Observed variability of Lake Superior pCO<sub>2</sub>. *Limnol. Oceanogr.* 56, 775–786.
- Bagherzadeh Lakani, F., Sattari, M., Sharifpour, I. and Kazemi, R. (2013). Effect of hypoxia, normoxia and hyperoxia conditions on gill histopathology in two weight groups of beluga (*Huso huso*). *Caspian J. Env. Sci.* 11, 77–84.

- **Baker, D. W.** (2010). Physiological responses associated with aquatic hypercarbia in the CO<sub>2</sub>tolerant white sturgeon, *Acipenser transmontanus*. *PhD thesis*. University of British Columbia, Vancouver, BC.
- **Baker, D. W. and Brauner, C. J.** (2012). Metabolic changes associated with acid–base regulation during hypercarbia in the CO<sub>2</sub>-tolerant chondrostean, white sturgeon (*Acipenser transmontanus*). *Comp. Biochem. Phys. A* **161**, 61–68.
- Baker, D. W., Hanson, L. M., Farrell, A. P. and Brauner, C. J. (2011). Exceptional CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance in white sturgeon (*Acipenser transmontanus*) is associated with protection of maximum cardiac performance during hypercapnia in situ. *Physiol. Biochem. Zool.* 84, 239–248.
- Baker, D. W., Matey, V., Huynh, K. T., Wilson, J. M., Morgan, J. D. and Brauner, C. J. (2009a). Complete intracellular pH protection during extracellular pH depression is associated with hypercarbia tolerance in white sturgeon, *Acipenser transmontanus*. Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol. 296, R1868–80.
- **Baker, D. W., May, C. and Brauner, C. J.** (2009b). A validation of intracellular pH measurements in fish exposed to hypercarbia: the effect of duration of tissue storage and efficacy of the metabolic inhibitor tissue homogenate method. *J. Fish Biol.* **75**, 268–275.
- **Baker, D. W., Sardella, B., Rummer, J. L., Sackville, M. and Brauner, C. J.** (2015). Hagfish: Champions of CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance question the origins of vertebrate gill function. *Sci. Rep.* **5**, 11182.
- Baker, D. W., Wood, A. M. and Kieffer, J. D. (2005a). Juvenile Atlantic and shortnose sturgeons (family: Acipenseridae) have different hematological responses to acute environmental hypoxia. *Physiol. Biochem. Zool.* 78, 916–925.
- Baker, D. W., Wood, A. M., Litvak, M. K. and Kieffer, J. D. (2005b). Haematology of juvenile Acipenser oxyrinchus and Acipenser brevirostrum at rest and following forced activity. J. Fish Biol. 66, 208–221.
- Baldwin, J., Seymour, R. S. and Webb, G. J. W. (1995). Scaling of anaerobic metabolism during exercise in the estuarine crocodile (*Crocodylus porosus*). *Comparative Biochemistry and Physiology* **112**, 285–293.
- Barnhart, M. C. and McMahon, B. R. (1988). Depression of aerobic metabolism and intracellular pH by hypercapnia in land snails, *Otala lactea. J. Exp. Biol.* 138, 289–299.
- Barton, B. A., Bollig, H., Hauskins, B. L. and Jansen, C. R. (2000). Juvenile pallid (*Scaphirhynchus albus*) and hybrid pallid×shovelnose (*S. albus×platorynchus*) sturgeons exhibit low physiological responses to acute handling and severe confinement. *Comp. Biochem. Phys. A* 126, 125–134.
- **Basso, L., Hendriks, I. E. and Rodríguez-Navarro, A. B.** (2015). Extreme pH conditions at a natural CO<sub>2</sub> Vent System (Italy) affect growth, and survival of juvenile pen shells (*Pinna nobilis*). *Estuar. Coasts* 1986–1999.
- Berenbrink, M., Koldkjaer, P., Kepp, O. and Cossins, A. R. (2005). Evolution of oxygen secretion in fishes and the emergence of a complex physiological system. *Science* **307**, 1752–1757.
- Bergmeyer, H. U. (1983). Methods of Enzymatic Analysis. New York: Academic Press.
- Betancur-R, R., Broughton, R. E., Wiley, E. O., Carpenter, K., Lopez, J. A., Li, C., Holcroft, N. I., Arcila, D., Sanciangco, M., Cureton, J. C., II, et al. (2013). The tree of life and a new classification of bony fishes. *PLoS Curr.* 5, 1-45.
- Betancur-R, R., Orti, G. and Pyron, R. A. (2015). Fossil-based comparative analyses reveal ancient marine ancestry erased by extinction in ray-finned fishes. *Ecol. Lett.* **18**, 441–450.
- Blair, J. E. (2005). Molecular Phylogeny and Divergence Times of Deuterostome Animals. *Mol Biol. Evol.* 22, 2275–2284.
- Booth, D. T. (1998). Nest temperature and respiratory gases during natural incubation in the broad-shelled river turtle, *Chelodina expansa* (Testudinata: Chelidae). *Aust. J. Zool.* 46, 183–191.
- Boron, W. F. (2004). Regulation of intracellular pH. *AJP: Advances in Physiology Education* 28, 160–179.
- Boron, W. F. and De Weer, P. (1976). Intracellular pH transients in squid giant axons caused by CO<sub>2</sub>, NH<sub>3</sub>, and metabolic inhibitors. *J. Gen. Physiol.* **67**, 91–112.
- Boutilier, R. G. and Shelton, G. (1980). The statistical treatment of hydrogen ion concentration and pH. *J. Exp. Biol.* 84, 335–339.
- Boutilier, R. G., Heming, T. A. and Iwama, G. K. (1984). Appendix: physicochemical parameters for use in fish respiratory physiology. In *Fish Physiology* (eds. Hoar, W. S. and Randall, D. J.), pp. 403–430. New York: Academic.
- Bouyer, P., Bradley, S. R., Zhao, J., Wang, W., Richerson, G. B. and Boron, W. F. (2004). Effect of extracellular acid–base disturbances on the intracellular pH of neurones cultured from rat medullary raphe or hippocampus. *J. Physiol.* **559**, 85–101.
- Brauner, C. J. (2008). Acid-base balance. In *Fish Larval Physiology* (eds. Finn, R. N. and Kapoor, B. G.), pp. 185–198. Enfield, NH: Science Publishers.
- Brauner, C. J. and Baker, D. W. (2009). Patterns of acid-base regulation during exposure to hypercarbia in fish. In *Cardio-Respiratory Control in Vertebrates: Comparative and Evolutionary Aspects* (eds. Glass, M. L. and Wood, S. C.), pp. 43–63. Berlin, Germany: Springer-Verlag.

- Brauner, C. J. and Berenbrink, M. (2007). Gas transport and exchange. In *Primitive Fishes, Fish Physiology* (eds. McKenzie, D. J., Farrell, A. P., and Brauner, C. J.), pp. 213–282. New York: Elsevier.
- Brauner, C. J., Wang, T., Wang, Y., Richards, J. G., Gonzalez, R. J., Bernier, N. J., Xi, W., Patrick, M. and Val, A. L. (2004). Limited extracellular but complete intracellular acidbase regulation during short-term environmental hypercapnia in the armoured catfish, *Liposarcus pardalis. J. Exp. Biol.* 207, 3381–3390.
- Bruggeman, V., Witters, A., De Smit, L., Debonne, M., Everaert, N., Kamers, B., Onagbesan, O. M., Degraeve, P. and Decuypere, E. (2007). Acid-base balance in chicken embryos (*Gallus domesticus*) incubated under high CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations during the first 10 days of incubation. *Respir. Physiol. Neurobiol.* 159, 147–154.
- Burda, H., Šumbera, R. and Begall, S. (2007). Microclimate in Burrows of Subterranean Rodents — Revisited. In Subterranean Rodents, pp. 21–33. Berlin, Heidelberg: Springer Berlin Heidelberg.
- Burggren, W. W., Andrewartha, S. J. and Tazawa, H. (2012). Interactions of acid–base balance and hematocrit regulation during environmental respiratory gas challenges in developing chicken embryos (*Gallus gallus*). *Respir. Physiol. Neurobiol.* **183**, 135–148.
- Busk, M., Larsen, E. H. and Jensen, F. B. (1997). Acid-base regulation in tadpoles of *Rana* catesbeiana exposed to environmental hypercapnia. J. Exp. Biol. 200, 2507–2512.
- Butman, D. and Raymond, P. A. (2011). Significant efflux of carbon dioxide from streams and rivers in the United States. *Nature Geosci* 4, 839–842.
- **Cameron, J. N.** (1989a). *The Respiratory Physiology of Animals*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Cameron, J. N. (1989b). Acid-Base Homeostasis: Past and Present Perspectives. *Physiol Zool* 62, 845–865.
- Carrete Vega, G. and Wiens, J. J. (2012). Why are there so few fish in the sea? *Proc. R. Soc. B Biol. Sci.* 279, 2323–2329.
- Cech, J. J. and Crocker, C. E. (2002). Physiology of sturgeon: effects of hypoxia and hypercapnia. J. Appl. Ichthyol. 18, 320–324.
- Ciuhandu, C. S., Wright, P. A., Goldberg, J. I. and Stevens, E. D. (2007). Parameters influencing the dissolved oxygen in the boundary layer of rainbow trout (*Oncorhynchus mykiss*) embryos and larvae. *J. Exp. Biol.* **210**, 1435–1445.
- Clack, J. A. (2007). Devonian climate change, breathing, and the origin of the tetrapod stem group. *Integr. Comp. Biol.* 47, 510–523.
- Claiborne, J. B. and Heisler, N. (1984). Acid-base regulation and ion transfers in the carp

(*Cyprinus carpio*) during and after exposure to environmental hypercapnia. J. Exp. Biol. **108**, 25–43.

- Cocherell, D. E., Kawabata, A., Kratville, D. W., Cocherell, S. A., Kaufman, R. C., Anderson, E. K., Chen, Z. Q., Bandeh, H., Rotondo, M. M., Padilla, R., et al. (2011).
   Passage performance and physiological stress response of adult white sturgeon ascending a laboratory fishway. J. Appl. Ichthyol. 27, 327–334.
- Cole, J. J., Caraco, N. F. and Kling, G. W. (1994). Carbon dioxide supersaturation in the surface waters of lakes. *Science* 265, 1568–1570.
- Crocker, C. E. and Cech, J. J., Jr (1998). Effects of hypercapnia on blood-gas and acid-base status in the white sturgeon, *Acipenser transmontanus*. J. Comp. Physiol. B 168, 50–60.
- Crocker, C. E. and Cech, J. J., Jr (1997). Effects of environmental hypoxia on oxygen consumption rate and swimming activity in juvenile white sturgeon, *Acipenser transmontanus*, in relation to temperature and life intervals. *Environ. Biol. Fish* **50**, 383–389.
- Crocker, C. E. and Cech, J. J., Jr (1996). The effects of hypercapnia on the growth of juvenile white sturgeon, *Acipenser transmontanus*. *Aquaculture* 147, 293–299.
- Crooks, R. J. and Simkiss, K. (1974). Respiratory acidosis and eggshell resorption by the chick embryo. *J. Exp. Biol.* 61, 197–202.
- **Crossley, D. A. and Altimiras, J.** (2005). Cardiovascular development in embryos of the American alligator *Alligator mississippiensis*: effects of chronic and acute hypoxia. *J. Exp. Biol.* **208**, 31–39.
- Crossley, D. and Altimiras, J. (2000). Ontogeny of cholinergic and adrenergic cardiovascular regulation in the domestic chicken (*Gallus gallus*). Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol. 279, R1091–R1098.
- Damsgaard, C., Gam, L. T. H., Dang, D. T., Van Thinh, P., Huong, D. T. T., Wang, T. and Bayley, M. (2015). High capacity for extracellular acid-base regulation in the air-breathing fish *Pangasianodon hypophthalmus. J. Exp. Biol.* 218, 1290–1294.
- de Faria, F., Jaramillo, P. and Sawakuchi, H. O. (2015). Estimating greenhouse gas emissions from future Amazonian hydroelectric reservoirs. *Environ. Res. Lett.* **10**, 124019.
- de Fátima F L Rasera, M., Krusche, A. V., Richey, J. E., Ballester, M. V. R. and Victória, R. L. (2013). Spatial and temporal variability of pCO<sub>2</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> efflux in seven Amazonian Rivers. *Biogeochemistry* 116, 241–259.
- Demaurex, N. (2002). pH Homeostasis of Cellular Organelles. Physiology 17, 1-5.
- Dennis, C. E., Wright, A. W. and Suski, C. D. (2016). Potential for carbon dioxide to act as a non-physical barrier for invasive sea lamprey movement. J. Great Lakes Res. 42, 150–155.

- **Dimberg, K.** (1988). High blood CO<sub>2</sub> levels in rainbow trout exposed to hypercapnia in bicarbonate-rich hard fresh water a methodological verification. *J. Exp. Biol.* **134**, 463–466.
- Eddy, F. B. (1976). Acid-base balance in rainbow trout (*Salmo gairdneri*) subjected to acid stresses. *J. Exp. Biol.* 64, 159–171.
- Edwards, S. L. and Marshall, W. S. (2013). Principles and patterns of osmoregulation and euryhalinity in fishes. In *Euryhaline Fishes: Fish Physiology* (eds. McCormick, S. D., Farrell, A. P., and Brauner, C. J.), pp. 1–44. New York: Academic Press.
- Eme, J. and Crossley, D. A. (2015). Chronic hypercapnic incubation increases relative organ growth and reduces blood pressure of embryonic American alligator (*Alligator mississippiensis*). Comp. Biochem. Phys. A 182, 53–57.
- Eme, J., Altimiras, J., Hicks, J. W. and Crossley, D. A., II (2011). Hypoxic alligator embryos: Chronic hypoxia, catecholamine levels and autonomic responses of *in ovo* alligators. *Comp. Biochem. Phys. A* 160, 412–420.
- Erasmus, B. W., Howell, B. J. and Rahn, H. (1971). Ontogeny of acid-base balance in the bullfrog and chicken. *Respir. Physiol.* **11**, 46–53.
- Erdogan, S., FitzHarris, G., Tartia, A. P. and Baltz, J. M. (2005). Mechanisms regulating intracellular pH are activated during growth of the mouse oocyte coincident with acquisition of meiotic competence. *Dev. Biol.* 286, 352–360.
- Erickson, D. L., North, J. A., Hightower, J. E., Weber, J. and Lauck, L. (2002). Movement and habitat use of green sturgeon *Acipenser medirostris* in the Rogue River, Oregon, USA. *J. Appl. Ichthyol.* 18, 565–569.
- **Espmark, Å. M. and Baeverfjord, G.** (2009). Effects of hyperoxia on behavioural and physiological variables in farmed Atlantic salmon (*Salmo salar*) parr. *Aquacult. Int.* **17**, 341–353.
- Evans, D. H., Piermarini, P. M. and Choe, K. P. (2005). The multifunctional fish gill: Dominant site of gas exchange, osmoregulation, acid-base regulation, and excretion of nitrogenous waste. *Physiol. Rev.* **85**, 97–177.
- Everaert, N., Willemsen, H., Willems, E., Franssens, L. and Decuypere, E. (2011). Acid-base regulation during embryonic development in amniotes, with particular reference to birds. *Respir. Physiol. Neurobiol.* **178**, 118–128.
- Filosa, J. A., Dean, J. B. and Putnam, R. W. (2002). Role of intracellular and extracellular pH in the chemosensitive response of rat locus coeruleus neurones. *J. Physiol.* **541.2**, 493–509.
- FitzHarris, G. and Baltz, J. M. (2009). Regulation of intracellular pH during oocyte growth and maturation in mammals. *Reproduction* **138**, 619–627.
- Furch, K. and Junk, W. J. (1997). Physicochemical Conditions in the Floodplains. In The

Central Amazon Floodplain, pp. 69-108. Berlin, Heidelberg: Springer Berlin Heidelberg.

- Furimsky, M., Moon, T. W. and Perry, S. F. (1999). Intracellular pH regulation in hepatocytes isolated from three teleost species. *J. Exp. Zool.* **284**, 361–367.
- **Furimsky, M., Moon, T. W. and Perry, S. F.** (2000). Evidence for the role of a Na<sup>+</sup>/HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> cotransporter in trout hepatocyte pH<sub>i</sub> regulation. *J. Exp. Biol.* **203**, 2201–2208.
- Galli, G. and Richards, J. G. (2012). The effect of temperature on mitochondrial respiration in permeabilized cardiac fibres from the freshwater turtle, *Trachemys scripta*. J. Therm. Biol. 37, 195–200.
- Geist, D. R., Brown, R. S., Cullinan, V., Brink, S. R., Lepla, K., Bates, P. and Chandler, J.
  A. (2005). Movement, swimming speed, and oxygen consumption of juvenile white sturgeon in response to changing flow, water temperature, and light level in the Snake River, Idaho. *T Am Fish Soc* 134, 803–816.
- Gilmour, K. and Perry, S. (1994). The effects of hypoxia, hyperoxia or hypercapnia on the acid-base disequilibrium in the arterial blood of rainbow trout. *J. Exp. Biol.* 192, 269–284.
- Gilmour, K. M. and Perry, S. F. (2009). Carbonic anhydrase and acid-base regulation in fish. *J. Exp. Biol.* 212, 1647–1661.
- Goldberg, J. I., Doran, S. A., Shartau, R. B., Pon, J. R., Ali, D. W., Tam, R. and Kuang, S. (2008). Integrative biology of an embryonic respiratory behaviour in pond snails: the 'embryo stir-bar hypothesis'. *J. Exp. Biol.* **211**, 1729–1736.
- Goldstein, J. I., Mok, J. M., Simon, C. M. and Leiter, J. C. (2000). Intracellular pH regulation in neurons from chemosensitive and nonchemosensitive regions of *Helix aspersa*. *Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol.* **279**, R414–R423.
- Gonzalez, N. C. and Clancy, R. L. (1986a). Acid-base regulation in prolonged hypoxia: effect of increased PCO<sub>2</sub>. *Respir. Physiol.* 64, 213–227.
- Gonzalez, N. C. and Clancy, R. L. (1986b). Intracellular pH regulation during prolonged hypoxia in rats. *Respir. Physiol.* 65, 331–339.
- Gonzalez, R. J., Brauner, C. J., Wang, Y. X., Richards, J. G., Patrick, M. L., Xi, W., Matey, V. and Val, A. L. (2010). Impact of ontogenetic changes in branchial morphology on gill function in *Arapaima gigas*. *Physiol. Biochem. Zool.* 83, 322–332.
- Gonzalez, R. J., Jones, S. L. and Nguyen, T. V. (2017). Ionoregulatory Characteristics of Non-Rio Negro Characiforms and Cichlids. *Physiol. Biochem. Zool.* 000–000.
- Goss, G. G., Laurent, P. and Perry, S. F. (1992). Evidence for a morphological component in acid-base regulation during environmental hypercapnia in the brown bullhead (*Ictalurus nebulosus*). *Cell Tissue Res.* 268, 539–552.

- **Graham, J. B.** (1997). *Air breathing fishes: Evolution, Diversity, and Adaptation*. San Diego, CA: Academic press.
- Grigg, G., Thompson, M., Beard, L. and Harlow, P. (2010). Oxygen levels in mound nests of *Crocodylus porosus* and *Alligator mississippiensis* are high, and gas exchange occurs primarily by diffusion, not convection. *Aust. Zool.* **35**, 235–244.
- Gunderson, T. E. (1998). Effects of hypoxia and temperature on survival, growth, and respiration of juvenile Atlantic sturgeon, *Acipenser oxyrinchus*. *Fish Bull.* **96**, 603–613.
- Gutowska, M., Melzner, F., Langenbuch, M., Bock, C., Claireaux, G. and Pörtner, H. (2010). Acid–base regulatory ability of the cephalopod (*Sepia officinalis*) in response to environmental hypercapnia. *J. Comp. Physiol. B* 180, 323–335.
- Halstead, L. B. (1985). The Vertebrate Invasion of Fresh Water. *Philos. Trans. R. Soc. B* **309**, 243–258.
- Hammer, K. M., Kristiansen, E. and Zachariassen, K. E. (2011). Physiological effects of hypercapnia in the deep-sea bivalve Acesta excavata (Fabricius, 1779) (Bivalvia; Limidae). Mar Environ Res 72, 135–142.
- Hanson, L. M., Baker, D. W., Kuchel, L. J., Farrell, A. P., Val, A. L. and Brauner, C. J. (2009). Intrinsic mechanical properties of the perfused armoured catfish heart with special reference to the effects of hypercapnic acidosis on maximum cardiac performance. *J. Exp. Biol.* 212, 1270–1276.
- Harter, T. S., Shartau, R. B., Baker, D. W., Jackson, D. C., Val, A. L. and Brauner, C. J. (2014). Preferential intracellular pH regulation represents a general pattern of pH homeostasis during acid-base disturbances in the armoured catfish, *Pterygoplichthys pardalis. J. Comp. Physiol. B* 184, 709–718.
- Hasler, C. T., Butman, D., Jeffrey, J. D. and Suski, C. D. (2016). Freshwater biota and rising pCO<sub>2</sub>? *Ecology Letters* **19**, 98–108.
- Hasler, C., Bouyoucos, I. A. and Suski, C. D. (2017). Tolerance to hypercarbia is repeatable and related to a component of the metabolic phenotype in a freshwater fish. *Physiol. Biochem. Zool.* 90, 583–587.
- Hawkins, D. G. (2004). No exit: thinking about leakage from geologic carbon storage sites. *Energy* **29**, 1571–1578.
- Hayashi, M., Kita, J. and Ishimatsu, A. (2004). Acid-base responses to lethal aquatic hypercapnia in three marine fishes. *Mar. Biol.* 144, 153–160.
- Hedges, S. B. and Kumar, S. (2009). The Timetree of Life. Oxford University Press.
- Heisler, N. (1982). Intracellular and extracellular acid-base regulation in the tropical fresh-water teleost fish *Synbranchus marmoratus* in response to the transition from water breathing to air

breathing. J. Exp. Biol. 99, 9-28.

- Heisler, N. (1984). Acid-base regulation in fishes. In *Fish Physiology* (eds. Hoar, W. S. and Randall, D. J.), pp. 315–401. San Diego: Academic.
- Heisler, N., Forcht, G., Ultsch, G. R. and Anderson, J. F. (1982). Acid-base regulation in response to environmental hypercapnia in two aquatic salamanders, *Siren lacertina* and *Amphiuma means*. *Respir. Physiol.* **49**, 141–158.
- Heisler, N., Toews, D. P. and Holeton, G. F. (1988). Regulation of ventilation and acid-base status in the elasmobranch *Scyliorhinus stellaris* during hyperoxia-induced hypercapnia. *Respir. Physiol.* 71, 227–246.
- Hildebrand, L. R., Drauch Schreier, A., Lepla, K., McAdam, S. O., McLellan, J., Parsley, M. J., Paragamian, V. L. and Young, S. P. (2016). Status of White Sturgeon (*Acipenser transmontanus* Richardson, 1863) throughout the species range, threats to survival, and prognosis for the future. J. Appl. Ichthyol. 32, 261–312.
- Hobe, H., Wood, C. M. and Wheatly, M. G. (1984). The mechanisms of acid-base and ionoregulation in the freshwater rainbow trout during environmental hyperoxia and subsequent normoxia. I. Extra- and intracellular acid-base status. *Respir. Physiol.* 55, 139– 154.
- Hochachka, P. (1986). Defense strategies against hypoxia and hypothermia. *Science* 231, 234–241.
- Howarth, F. G. and Stone, F. D. (1990). Elevated carbon dioxide levels in Bayliss Cave, Australia: Implications for the evolution of obligate cave species. *Pac. Sci.* 44, 207–218.
- Hsu, H.-H., Lin, L.-Y., Tseng, Y.-C., Horng, J.-L. and Hwang, P.-P. (2014). A new model for fish ion regulation: identification of ionocytes in freshwater- and seawater-acclimated medaka (Oryzias latipes). *Cell Tissue Res.* **357**, 225–243.
- Huynh, K. T., Baker, D. W., Harris, R., Church, J. and Brauner, C. J. (2011a). Capacity for intracellular pH compensation during hypercapnia in white sturgeon primary liver cells. J. Comp. Physiol. B 181, 893–904.
- Huynh, K. T., Baker, D. W., Harris, R., Church, J. and Brauner, C. J. (2011b). Effect of hypercapnia on intracellular pH regulation in a rainbow trout hepatoma cell line, RTH 149. *J. Comp. Physiol. B* 181, 883–892.
- Hwang, P.-P., Lee, T.-H. and Lin, L.-Y. (2011). Ion regulation in fish gills: recent progress in the cellular and molecular mechanisms. *Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol.* **301**, R28–R47.
- Ishimatsu, A., Hayashi, M. and Kikkawa, T. (2008). Fishes in high-CO<sub>2</sub>, acidified oceans. *Mar. Ecol. Prog. Ser.* **373**, 295–302.

- Jackson, D. C. (2003). Lactate sequestration by osteoderms of the broad-nose caiman, Caiman latirostris, following capture and forced submergence. *J. Exp. Biol.* **206**, 3601–3606.
- Jackson, D. C. (1987). Cardiovascular Function in Turtles During Anoxia and Acidosis: *In vivo* and *in vitro* Studies. *Amer. Zool.* 27, 49–58.
- Jackson, D. C., Arendt, E. A., Inman, K. C., Lawler, R. G., Panol, G. and Wasser, J. S. (1991). <sup>31</sup>P-NMR study of normoxic and anoxic perfused turtle heart during graded CO<sub>2</sub> and lactic acidosis. *Am. J. Physiol.* **260**, R1130–6.
- Jackson, D. C., Crocker, C. E. and Ultsch, G. R. (2000a). Bone and shell contribution to lactic acid buffering of submerged turtles *Chrysemys picta bellii* at 3°C. Am. J. Physiol. 278, R1564–R1571.
- Jackson, D. C., Ramsey, A. L., Paulson, J. M., Crocker, C. E. and Ultsch, G. R. (2000b). Lactic acid buffering by bone and shell in anoxic softshell and painted turtles. *Physiol. Biochem. Zool.* 73, 290–297.
- Janis, C. M., Devlin, K., Warren, D. E. and Witzmann, F. (2012). Dermal bone in early tetrapods: a palaeophysiological hypothesis of adaptation for terrestrial acidosis. *Proc. R. Soc. B Biol. Sci.* 279, 3035–3040.
- Jibb, L. A. and Richards, J. G. (2008). AMP-activated protein kinase activity during metabolic rate depression in the hypoxic goldfish, *Carassius auratus. J. Exp. Biol.* **211**, 3111–3122.
- Johnson, C. H. and Epel, D. (1981). Intracellular pH of sea urchin eggs measured by the dimethyloxazolidinedione (DMO) method. *J. Cell Biol.* **89**, 284.
- Kates, D., Dennis, C., Noatch, M. R., Suski, C. D. and MacLatchy, D. L. (2012). Responses of native and invasive fishes to carbon dioxide: potential for a nonphysical barrier to fish dispersal. *Can. J. Fish Aquat. Sci.* 69, 1748–1759.
- Kieffer, J. D., Wakefield, A. M. and Litvak, M. K. (2001). Juvenile sturgeon exhibit reduced physiological responses to exercise. *J. Exp. Biol.* **204**, 4281–4289.
- Kieffer, J., Currie, S. and Tufts, B. (1994). Effects of environmental temperature on the metabolic and acid-base responses of rainbow trout to exhaustive exercise. *J. Exp. Biol.* 194, 299–317.
- Kikkawa, T., Watanabe, Y., Katayama, Y., Kita, J. and Ishimatsu, A. (2008). Acute CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance limits of juveniles of three marine invertebrates, *Sepia lycidas, Sepioteuthis lessoniana*, and *Marsupenaeus japonicus*. *Plankton Benthos Res.* **3**, 184–187.
- Krumschnabel, G., Manzl, C. and Schwarzbaum, P. J. (2001). Regulation of intracellular pH in anoxia-tolerant and anoxia-intolerant teleost hepatocytes. *J. Exp. Biol.* **204**, 3943–3951.
- Kwong, R. W. M., Kumai, Y. and Perry, S. F. (2014). The physiology of fish at low pH: the zebrafish as a model system. *J. Exp. Biol.* 217, 651–662.

Lackner, K. S. (2003). A guide to CO<sub>2</sub> sequestration. Science 300, 1677–1678.

- Lane, M. (1999). Bicarbonate/chloride exchange regulates intracellular pH of embryos but not oocytes of the hamster. *Biol. Reprod.* **61**, 452–457.
- Lane, M. and Bavister, B. D. (1999). Regulation of intracellular pH in bovine oocytes and cleavage stage embryos. *Mol. Reprod. Dev.* 54, 396–401.
- Larsen, B. K. and Jensen, F. B. (1997). Influence of ionic composition on acid-base regulation in rainbow trout (*Oncorhynchus mykiss*) exposed to environmental hypercapnia. *Fish Physiol. Biochem.* 16, 157–170.
- Larsen, B. K., Portner, H. O. and Jensen, F. B. (1997). Extra- and intracellular acid-base balance and ionic regulation in cod (*Gadus morhua*) during combined and isolated exposures to hypercapnia and copper. *Mar. Biol.* **128**, 337–346.
- Lecuyer, C. (2014). *Water on Earth*. (eds. Mariotti, A. and Pomerol, J.-C.) John Wiley and Sons.
- Lefevre, S., Damsgaard, C., Pascale, D. R., Nilsson, G. E. and Stecyk, J. A. W. (2014). Air breathing in the Arctic: influence of temperature, hypoxia, activity and restricted air access on respiratory physiology of the Alaska blackfish *Dallia pectoralis*. J. Exp. Biol. 217, 4387– 4398.
- Lemaire, B., Beck, M., Jaspart, M., Debier, C. and Calderon, P. B. (2011). Precision-cut liver slices of *Salmo salar* as a tool to investigate the oxidative impact of CYP1A-mediated PCB 126 and 3-methylcholanthrene metabolism. *Toxicol. In Vitro* 25, 335–342.
- Li, S., Lu, X. X. and Bush, R. T. (2013). CO<sub>2</sub> partial pressure and CO<sub>2</sub> emission in the Lower Mekong River. *J. Hydrol.* **504**, 40–56.
- Lin, H. and Randall, D. (1995). Proton pumps in fish gills. In *Fish Physiology* (eds. Wood, C. M. and Shuttleworth, T. J.), pp. 229–255. Fish Physiology.
- Liu, S., Piwnica-Worms, D. and Lieberman, M. (1990). Intracellular pH regulation in cultured embryonic chick heart cells. Na<sup>+</sup>-dependent Cl<sup>-</sup>/HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> exchange. J. Gen. Physiol. 96, 1247–1269.
- Lutz, P. L. and Dunbar-Cooper, A. (1984). The nest environment of the American crocodile (*Crocodylus acutus*). *Copeia* **1984**, 153–161.
- Macqueen, D. J. and Johnston, I. A. (2014). A well-constrained estimate for the timing of the salmonid whole genome duplication reveals major decoupling from species diversification. *Proc. R. Soc. B* 281, 20132881.
- Maddison, W. P. and maddison, D. R. Mesquite: a modular system for evolutionary analysis.

Malan, A., Rodeau, J. L. and Daull, F. (1985). Intracellular pH in hibernation and respiratory

acidosis in the European hamster. J. Comp. Physiol. B 156, 251-258.

- Mandic, M., Lau, G. Y., Nijjar, M. and Richards, J. G. (2008). Metabolic recovery in goldfish: A comparison of recovery from severe hypoxia exposure and exhaustive exercise. *Comp. Biochem. Phys. C* 148, 332–338.
- Marcé, R., Obrador, B., Morguí, J.-A., Lluís Riera, J., López, P. and Armengol, J. (2015). Carbonate weathering as a driver of CO<sub>2</sub> supersaturation in lakes. *Nature Geosci.* 8, 107–111.
- Maxime, V., Nonnotte, G., Peyraud, C., Williot, P. and Truchot, J. P. (1995). Circulatory and respiratory effects of an hypoxic stress in the Siberian sturgeon. *Respir. Physiol.* 100, 203–212.
- McBrian, M. A., Behbahan, I. S., Ferrari, R., Su, T., Huang, T.-W., Li, K., Hong, C. S., Christofk, H. R., Vogelauer, M., Seligson, D. B., et al. (2013). Histone Acetylation Regulates Intracellular pH. *Mol. Cell* **49**, 310–321.
- McEnroe, M. and Cech, J. J., Jr (1985). Osmoregulation in juvenile and adult white sturgeon, *Acipenser transmontanus. Environ. Biol. Fish* 14, 23–30.
- McKenzie, D. J., Piccolella, M., Valle, A. Z. D., Taylor, E. W., Bolis, C. L. and Steffensen, J. F. (2003). Tolerance of chronic hypercapnia by the European eel *Anguilla anguilla*. J. Exp. Biol. 206, 1717–1726.
- McKenzie, D. J., Taylor, E. W., Dalla Valle, A. Z. and Steffensen, J. F. (2002). Tolerance of acute hypercapnic acidosis by the European eel (*Anguilla anguilla*). J. Comp. Physiol. B 172, 339–346.
- McLean, M. F., Hanson, K. C., Cooke, S. J., Hinch, S. G., Patterson, D. A., Nettles, T. L., Litvak, M. K. and Crossin, G. T. (2016). Physiological stress response, reflex impairment and delayed mortality of white sturgeon *Acipenser transmontanus* exposed to simulated fisheries stressors. *Conserv. Physiol.* 4, cow031.
- McNeil, B. I. and Sasse, T. P. (2016). Future ocean hypercapnia driven by anthropogenic amplification of the natural CO<sub>2</sub> cycle. *Nature* **529**, 383–386.
- Melzner, F., Gutowska, M. A., Langenbuch, M., Dupont, S., Lucassen, M., Thorndyke, M. C., Bleich, M. and Portner, H. O. (2009). Physiological basis for high CO<sub>2</sub> tolerance in marine ectothermic animals: pre-adaptation through lifestyle and ontogeny? *Biogeosciences* 6, 2313–2331.
- Meredith, R. W., Janecka, J. E., Gatesy, J., Ryder, O. A., Fisher, C. A., Teeling, E. C., Goodbla, A., Eizirik, E., Simao, T. L. L., Stadler, T., et al. (2011). Impacts of the Cretaceous Terrestrial Revolution and KPg Extinction on Mammal Diversification. *Science* 334, 521–524.

Michaelidis, B., Ouzounis, C., Paleras, A. and Portner, H. O. (2005). Effects of long-term

moderate hypercapnia on acid-base balance and growth rate in marine mussels *Mytilus* galloprovincialis. Mar. Ecol. Prog. Ser. **293**, 109–118.

- Milligan, C. L. and Farrell, T. P. (1986). Extracellular and intracellular acid-base status following strenuous activity in the sea raven (*Hemitripterus americanus*). J. Comp. Physiol. B 156, 583–590.
- Milligan, C. L. and Wood, C. M. (1987a). Muscle and liver intracellular acid-base and metabolite status after strenuous activity in the inactive, benthic starry flounder Platichthys stellatus. *Physiol Zool* **60**, 54–68.
- **Milligan, C. L. and Wood, C. M.** (1987b). Effects of strenuous activity on intracellular and extracellular acid-base status and H<sup>+</sup> exchange with the environment in the inactive, benthic starry flounder *Platichthys stellatus*. *Physiol. Zool.* **60**, 37–53.
- **Mojazi Amiri, B., Baker, D. W., Morgan, J. D. and Brauner, C. J.** (2009). Size dependent early salinity tolerance in two sizes of juvenile white sturgeon, *Acipenser transmontanus*. *Aquaculture* **286**, 121–126.
- Molich, A. and Heisler, N. (2005). Determination of pH by microfluorometry: intracellular and interstitial pH regulation in developing early-stage fish embryos (*Danio rerio*). J. Exp. Biol. 208, 4137–4149.
- **Mueller, C., Tazawa, H. and Burggren, W.** (2014). Dynamics of acid-base metabolic compensation and hematological regulation interactions in response to CO<sub>2</sub> challenges in embryos of the chicken (*Gallus gallus*). J. Comp. Physiol. B **184**, 641–649.
- Nelson, J. S. (2006). Fishes of the world. New York: John Wiley and Sons.
- Nestler, J. R. (1990). Intracellular pH during daily torpor in *Peromyscus maniculatus*. J. Comp. *Physiol. B* **159**, 661–666.
- Nilsson, G. E. (2001). Surviving anoxia with the brain turned on. Physiology 16, 217–221.
- Nottingham, S., Leiter, J. C., Wages, P., Buhay, S. and Erlichman, J. S. (2001). Developmental changes in intracellular pH regulation in medullary neurons of the rat. *Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol.* 281, R1940–R1951.
- Occhipinti, R. and Boron, W. F. (2015). Mathematical modeling of acid-base physiology. *Prog. Biophys. Mol. Biol.* 117, 557–573.
- Park, P. K., Gordon, L. I., Hager, S. W. and Cissell, M. C. (1969). Carbon Dioxide Partial Pressure in the Columbia River. *Science* 166, 867–868.
- Parks, S. K. and Pouysségur, J. (2017). Targeting pH regulating proteins for cancer therapy-Progress and limitations. *Semin. Cancer Biol.* 43, 66–73.

Parks, S. K., Tresguerres, M. and Goss, G. G. (2009). Cellular mechanisms of Cl<sup>-</sup> transport in

trout gill mitochondrion-rich cells. Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol. 296, R1161–R1169.

- **Perry, S. F. and Gilmour, K. M.** (2006). Acid-base balance and CO<sub>2</sub> excretion in fish: unanswered questions and emerging models. *Respir. Physiol. Neurobiol.* **154**, 199–215.
- Perry, S. F., Vulesevic, B., Grosell, M. and Bayaa, M. (2009). Evidence that SLC26 anion transporters mediate branchial chloride uptake in adult zebrafish (*Danio rerio*). Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol. 297, R988–R997.
- Phillips, K. P., Léveillé, M.-C., Claman, P. and Baltz, J. M. (2000). Intracellular pH regulation in human preimplantation embryos. *Hum. Reprod.* 15, 896–904.
- **Pinardi, M., Rossetto, M., Viaroli, P. and Bartoli, M.** (2014). Daily and seasonal variability of CO<sub>2</sub> saturation and evasion in a free flowing and in a dammed river reach. *J. Limnol.* **73**, 468-481.
- Portner, H. O., Bock, C. and Reipschlager, A. (2000). Modulation of the cost of pH<sub>i</sub> regulation during metabolic depression: A P-31-NMR study in invertebrate (*Sipunculus nudus*) isolated muscle. J. Exp. Biol. 203, 2417–2428.
- **Portner, H. O., Boutilier, R. G., Tang, Y. and Toews, D. P.** (1990). Determination of intracellular pH and PCO<sub>2</sub> values after metabolic inhibition by fluoride and nitrilotriacetic acid. *Respir. Physiol.* **81**, 255–274.
- Portner, H. O., Reipschlager, A. and Heisler, N. (1998). Acid-base regulation, metabolism and energetics in *Sipunculus nudus* as a function of ambient carbon dioxide level. *J. Exp. Biol.* 201, 43–55.
- Prange, H. D. and Ackerman, R. A. (1974). Oxygen consumption and mechanisms of gas exchange of green turtle (*Chelonia mydas*) eggs and hatchlings. *Copeia* 1974, 758–763.
- Putnam, R. W. and Roos, A. (1997). Intracellular pH. In *Handbook of physiology, vol 14, Cell physiology* (eds. Hoffman, J. and Jamieson, J., pp. 389–440. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Rahn, H. (1974). Body temperature and acid-base regulation. Pneumonologie 151, 87-94.
- Randall, D. J., Burggren, W. W., Farrell, A. P. and Haswell, M. S. (1981). *The evolution of air breathing in vertebrates*. Cambridge: Cambridge University press.
- Raymond, P. A., Hartmann, J., Lauerwald, R., Sobek, S., McDonald, C., Hoover, M., Butman, D., Striegl, R., Mayorga, E., Humborg, C., et al. (2013). Global carbon dioxide emissions from inland waters. *Nature* **503**, 355–359.
- Regan, M. D., Turko, A. J., Heras, J., Andersen, M. K., Lefevre, S., Wang, T., Bayley, M., Brauner, C. J., Huong, D. T. T., Phuong, N. T., et al. (2016). Ambient CO<sub>2</sub>, fish behaviour and altered GABAergic neurotransmission: exploring the mechanism of CO<sub>2</sub>-

altered behaviour by taking a hypercapnia dweller down to low CO<sub>2</sub> levels. *J. Exp. Biol.* **219**, 109–118.

- **Reshkin, S. J., Greco, M. R. and Cardone, R. A.** (2014). Role of pH<sub>i</sub>, and proton transporters in oncogene-driven neoplastic transformation. *Phil. Trans. R. Soc. B* **369**, 20130100.
- Reum, J. C. P., Alin, S. R., Feely, R. A., Newton, J., Warner, M. and McElhany, P. (2014). Seasonal carbonate chemistry covariation with temperature, oxygen, and salinity in a fjord estuary: implications for the design of ocean acidification experiments. *PLOS ONE* 9, e89619.
- Richards, J. G. (2011). Physiological, behavioral and biochemical adaptations of intertidal fishes to hypoxia. *J. Exp. Biol.* **214**, 191–199.
- Ritucci, N. A. (2005). Response of membrane potential and intracellular pH to hypercapnia in neurons and astrocytes from rat retrotrapezoid nucleus. *Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol.* 289, R851–R861.
- Robergs, R. A., Ghiasvand, F. and Parker, D. (2004). Biochemistry of exercise-induced metabolic acidosis. Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol. 287, R502–R516.
- Roos, A. and Boron, W. F. (1981). Intracellular pH. Physiol. Rev. 61, 296–434.
- Rowlett, K. and Simkiss, K. (1989). Respiratory gases and acid-base balance in shell-less avian embryos. *J. Exp. Biol.* 143, 529–536.
- Salameh, A. I., Ruffin, V. A. and Boron, W. F. (2014). Effects of metabolic acidosis on intracellular pH responses in multiple cell types. *Am. J. Physiol. Regul. Integr. Comp. Physiol.* 307, R1413–27.
- Sanchez, A. P., Giusti, H., Bassi, M. and Glass, M. L. (2005). Acid-base regulation in the South American lungfish *Lepidosiren paradoxa*: Effects of prolonged hypercarbia on blood gases and pulmonary ventilation. *Physiol. Biochem. Zool.* 78, 908–915.
- Schapiro, F. B. and Grinstein, S. (2000). Determinants of the pH of the Golgi Complex. J. Biol. Chem. 275, 21025–21032.
- Seymour, R. S., Vleck, D. and Vleck, C. M. (1986). Gas exchange in the incubation mounds of megapode birds. J. Comp. Physiol. B 156, 773–782.
- Shams, I., Avivi, A. and Nevo, E. (2005). Oxygen and carbon dioxide fluctuations in burrows of subterranean blind mole rats indicate tolerance to hypoxic-hypercapnic stresses. *Comp. Biochem. Phys. A* 142, 376–382.
- Shartau, R. B. and Brauner, C. J. (2014). Acid-base and ion balance in fishes with bimodal respiration. *J. Fish Biol.* 84, 682–704.
- Shartau, R. B., Baker, D. W. and Brauner, C. J. (2017a). White sturgeon (Acipenser

*transmontanus*) acid-base regulation differs in response to different types of acidoses. *J. Comp. Physiol. B.* **187**, 985-994.

- Shartau, R. B., Baker, D. W., Crossley, D. A. and Brauner, C. J. (2016a). Preferential intracellular pH regulation: hypotheses and perspectives. *J. Exp. Biol.* **219**, 2235–2244.
- Shartau, R. B., Brix, K. V. and Brauner, C. J. (2017b). Characterization of Na<sup>+</sup> transport to gain insight into the mechanism of acid-base and ion regulation in white sturgeon (*Acipenser transmontanus*). *Comp. Biochem. Phys. A* **204**, 197–204.
- Shartau, R. B., Crossley, D. A., Kohl, Z. F. and Brauner, C. J. (2016b). Embryonic common snapping turtles (*Chelydra serpentina*) preferentially regulate intracellular tissue pH during acid-base challenges. J. Exp. Biol. 219, 1994–2002.
- Shartau, R. B., Crossley, D. A., Kohl, Z. F., Elsey, R. M. and Brauner, C. J. (In press). American alligator (*Alligator mississippiensis*) embryos tightly regulate intracellular pH during a severe acidosis. *Can. J. Zool.*
- Shartau, R. B., Harris, S., Boychuk, E. C. and Goldberg, J. I. (2010). Rotational behaviour of encapsulated pond snail embryos in diverse natural environments. *J. Exp. Biol.* 213, 2086– 2093.
- Shaughnessy, C. A., Baker, D. W., Brauner, C. J., Morgan, J. D. and Bystriansky, J. S. (2015). Interaction of osmoregulatory and acid-base compensation in white sturgeon (*Acipenser transmontanus*) during exposure to aquatic hypercarbia and elevated salinity. J. Exp. Biol. 218, 2712–2719.
- Siesjö, B. K., Folbergrová, J. and MacMillan, V. (1972). The effect of hypercapnia upon intracellular pH in the brain, evaluated by the bicarbonate-carbonic acid method and from the creatine phosphokinase equilibrium. *J. Neurochem.* **19**, 2483–2495.
- Singh, Y., Cooke, J. B., Hinton, D. E. and Miller, M. G. (1996). Trout liver slices for metabolism and toxicity studies. *Drug Metab. Dispos.* 24, 7–14.
- Siyanov, V. and Baltz, J. M. (2013). NHE1 Is the Sodium-Hydrogen Exchanger Active in Acute Intracellular pH Regulation in Preimplantation Mouse Embryos. *Biol. Reprod.* 88, 1-11.
- Smart, G. R., Knox, D., Harrison, J. G., Ralph, J. A., Richards, R. H. and Cowey, C. B. (1979). Nephrocalcinosis in rainbow trout *Salmo gairdneri* Richardson; the effect of exposure to elevated CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations. *J. Fish Dis.* 2, 279–289.
- Snyder, G. K. and Nestler, J. R. (1991). Intracellular pH in the toad *Bufo marinus* following hypercapnia. *J. Exp. Biol.* 161, 415–422.
- Snyder, G. K., Nestler, J. R., Shapiro, J. I. and Huntley, J. (1995). Intracellular pH in lizards after hypercapnia. *Am. J. Physiol.* 268, R889–R895.

- Soengas, J. L. and Aldegunde, M. (2002). Energy metabolism of fish brain. *Comp. Biochem. Phys. B* **131**, 271–296.
- Sorey, M. L., Werner, C., McGimsey, R. G. and Evans, W. C. (2000). *Hydrothermal activity* and carbon-dioxide discharge at shrub and upper Klawasi mud volcanoes, Wrangell mountains, Alaska. U. S. Geological Survey, Water-Resources Investigations Report.
- Spicer, J. I., Raffo, A. and Widdicombe, S. (2007). Influence of CO<sub>2</sub>-related seawater acidification on extracellular acid–base balance in the velvet swimming crab *Necora puber*. *Mar. Biol.* 151, 1117–1125.
- Spicer, J. I., Widdicombe, S., Needham, H. R. and Berge, J. A. (2011). Impact of CO<sub>2</sub>acidified seawater on the extracellular acid-base balance of the northern sea urchin *Strongylocentrotus dröebachiensis. J. Exp. Mar. Biol. Ecol.* **407**, 19–25.
- Squirrell, J. M., Lane, M. and Bavister, B. D. (2001). Altering intracellular pH disrupts development and cellular organization in preimplantation hamster embryos. *Biol. Reprod.* 64, 1845–1854.
- Stabenau, E. K. and Heming, T. A. (1993). Determination of the constants of the Henderson-Hasselbalch equation, (alpha)CO<sub>2</sub> and pKa, in sea turtle plasma. *J. Exp. Biol.* 180, 311–314.
- Stapp, L. S., Kreiss, C. M., Portner, H. O. and Lannig, G. (2015). Differential impacts of elevated CO<sub>2</sub> and acidosis on the energy budget of gill and liver cells from Atlantic cod, *Gadus morhua. Comp. Biochem. Phys. A* 187, 160–167.
- Stumpp, M., Hu, M. Y., Melzner, F., Gutowska, M. A., Dorey, N., Himmerkus, N., Holtmann, W. C., Dupont, S. T., Thorndyke, M. C. and Bleich, M. (2012). Acidified seawater impacts sea urchin larvae pH regulatory systems relevant for calcification. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 109, 18192–18197.
- **Tazawa, H.** (1980). Oxygen and CO<sub>2</sub> exchange and acid-base regulation in the avian embryo. *Amer. Zool.* **20**, 395–404.
- Thohan, S., Zurich, M. C., Chung, H., Weiner, M., Kane, A. S. and Rosen, G. M. (2001). Tissue Slices Revisited: Evaluation and Development of a Short-Term Incubation for Integrated Drug Metabolism. *Drug Metab Dispos* 29, 1337–1342.
- Tierney, K. B. (2016). Chemical avoidance responses of fishes. Aquat. Toxicol. 174, 228–241.
- Toews, D. P. and Heisler, N. (1982). The effects of hypercapnia on intracellular and extracellular acid-base status in the toad *Bufo marinus*. J. Exp. Biol. 97, 79–86.
- Toews, D. P., Holeton, G. F. and Heisler, N. (1983). Regulation of the acid-base status during environmental hypercapnia in the marine teleost fish *Conger conger. J. Exp. Biol.* 107, 9–20.
- Tokudome, G., Tomonari, H., Gardner, J. P., Aladjem, M., Fine, B. P., Lasker, N., Gutkin, M., Byrd, L. H. and Aviv, A. (1990). Variations in the apparent pH set point for activation

of platelet Na-H antiport. Hypertension 16, 180-189.

- Udvardy, M. (1975). A classification of the biogeographical provinces of the world. *IUCN* Occassional Papers 18, 1–50.
- Ultsch, G. R. (1987). The potential role of hypercarbia in the transition from water-breathing to air-breathing in vertebrates. *Evolution* **41**, 442–445.
- **Ultsch, G. R.** (1996). Gas exchange, hypercarbia and acid-base balance, paleoecology, and the evolutionary transition from water-breathing to air-breathing among vertebrates. *Palaeogeogr. Palaeoclimatol. Palaeoecol.* **123**, 1–27.
- Val, A. L., De Almeida Val, V. M. F. and Randall, D. J. (2005). Tropical Environment. In *The Physiology of Tropical Fishes: Fish Physiology* (eds. Hoar, W. S., Randall, D. J., and Farrell, A. P.), pp. 1–45. New York: Academic Press.
- Vandenberg, J. I., Metcalfe, J. C. and Grace, A. A. (1994). Intracellular pH recovery during respiratory acidosis in perfused hearts. *AJP: Cell Physiology* **266**, C489–C497.
- Vaughan-Jones, R. D., Spitzer, K. W. and Swietach, P. (2009). Intracellular pH regulation in heart. J. Mol. Cell Cardiol. 46, 318–331.
- Wang, Y., Heigenhauser, G. J. and Wood, C. M. (1994). Integrated responses to exhaustive exercise and recovery in rainbow trout white muscle: acid-base, phosphogen, carbohydrate, lipid, ammonia, fluid volume and electrolyte metabolism. *J. Exp. Biol.* **195**, 227–258.
- Warren, D. E. (2005). The role of mineralized tissue in the buffering of lactic acid during anoxia and exercise in the leopard frog Rana pipiens. *J. Exp. Biol.* **208**, 1117–1124.
- Wasser, J. S., Warburton, S. J. and Jackson, D. C. (1991). Extracellular and intracellular acid-base effects of submergence anoxia and nitrogen breathing in turtles. *Respir. Physiol.* 83, 239–252.
- Wearing, O., Eme, J., Kemp, A. and Crossley, D. (2014). Impact of hypercapnic incubation on hatchling common snapping turtle (*Chelydra serpentina*) growth and metabolism. *The FASEB Journal* 28 1 Supplement 1101.3.
- Weyhenmeyer, G. A., Kortelainen, P., Sobek, S., Müller, R. and Rantakari, M. (2012). Carbon Dioxide in Boreal Surface Waters: A Comparison of Lakes and Streams. *Ecosystems* 15, 1295–1307.
- Wood, C. M. and LeMoigne, J. (1991). Intracellular acid-base responses to environmental hyperoxia and normoxic recovery in rainbow trout. *Respir. Physiol.* **86**, 91–113.
- Wood, C. M., Turner, J. D. and Graham, M. S. (1983). Why do fish die after severe exercise? *J. Fish Biol.* 22, 189–201.
- Wood, C. M., Turner, J. D., Munger, R. S. and Graham, M. S. (1990). Control of ventilation

in the hypercapnic skate *Raja ocellata*: II. Cerebrospinal fluid and intracellular pH in the brain and other tissues. *Respir. Physiol.* **80**, 279–298.

- Wood, S. C. and Schaefer, K. E. (1978). Regulation of intracellular pH in lungs and other tissues during hypercapnia. J. Appl. Physiol. 45, 115–118.
- Wright, P. A., Randall, D. J. and Wood, C. M. (1988). The distribution of ammonia and H<sup>+</sup> between tissue compartments in lemon sole (*Parophrys vetulus*) at rest, during hypercapnia and following exercise. *J. Exp. Biol.* **136**, 149–175.
- Yaksh, T. L. and Anderson, R. E. (1987). *In vivo* studies on intracellular pH, focal flow, and vessel diameter in the cat cerebral cortex: effects of altered CO<sub>2</sub> and electrical stimulation. *J. Cereb. Blood Flow Metab.* 7, 332–341.
- **Yntema, C. L.** (1968). A series of stages in the embryonic development of *Chelydra serpentina*. *J. Morphol.* **125**, 219–251.
- Yoshikawa, H., Fumio, K. and Masao, K. (1994). The relationship between the EEG and brain pH in carp, *Cyprinus carpio*, subjected to environmental hypercapnia at an anesthetic level. *Comparative Biochemistry and Physiology Part A: Physiology* **107**, 307–312.
- Zeidler, R. and Kim, H. D. (1977). Preferential hemolysis of postnatal calf red cells induced by internal alkanlinization. *J. Gen. Physiol.* **70**, 385.
- Zhang, P., Liang, D., Mao, R.-L., Hillis, D. M., Wake, D. B. and Cannatella, D. C. (2013). Efficient Sequencing of Anuran mtDNAs and a Mitogenomic Exploration of the Phylogeny and Evolution of Frogs. *Mol. Biol. Evol.* **30**, 1899–1915.
- **Zhao, Y. and Baltz, J. M.** (1996). Bicarbonate/chloride exchange and intracellular pH throughout preimplantation mouse embryo development. *Am. J. Physiol.* **271**, C1512–20.
- Zimmer, A. M. and Wood, C. M. (2014). Exposure to acute severe hypoxia leads to increased urea loss and disruptions in acid-base and ionoregulatory balance in dogfish sharks (*squalus acanthias*). *Physiol. Biochem. Zool.* **87**, 623–639.

## Appendix: A note on the methodology of pH measurements

The majority of this thesis relies on measurements of  $pH_e$  and  $pH_i$  to determine the pattern of acid-base regulation in the animals examined; consequently, reliable and accurate pH measurements are critical to the work and conclusions of my thesis.

## Extracellular pH measurement

In Chapters 2 and 3, pH<sub>e</sub> measurements were obtained from blood taken via caudal puncture which may differ from that of dorsal aortic blood drawn from a cannulated fish as performing cannulations was not always possible. To avoid the negative effects associated with caudal puncture for blood sampling, prior to sampling I lightly anesthetized fish in their container while ensuring sufficient aeration (either air or treatment gas); fish were then sampled in the container while keeping them submerged except for the site of the caudal puncture. This ensured the fish did not struggle, nor became hypoxic during sampling. To ensure pH values obtained via caudal puncture produced pH values comparable to those taken via dorsal aorta cannulation, I compared the two techniques in rainbow trout. pHe from dorsal aorta cannulated and caudal puncture in control fish were  $7.93 \pm 0.03$  (mean  $\pm$  s.e.m.; n=12) and  $7.83 \pm 0.04$  (n=8) pH units, respectively. In fish exposed to 1.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> for 24 h, dorsal aorta cannulated fish and caudal puncture were  $7.53 \pm 0.04$  (n=4) and  $7.41 \pm 0.04$  (n=7) pH units, respectively. The pH<sub>e</sub> differences between sampling technique for control and 1.5 kPa PCO<sub>2</sub> are not significant (independent samples t-test, P>0.05) and the relative difference between techniques is similar (0.101 and 0.122 pH units, in fish sampled via cannulation and caudal puncture, respectively). Differences between techniques can be largely attributed to stress during caudal puncture sampling, and some mixing of arterial and venous blood where the latter may be slightly lower than arterial pHe in trout (Eddy, 1976). Despite caudal puncture sampling underestimating pHe, through careful technique, this difference was minimized and the relative differences between control and treatment are still maintained; thus, use of caudal puncture provides a quick and reliable method of blood sampling.

## Intracellular pH measurement

To assess pH<sub>i</sub> regulation in response to acid-base challenges, I measured pH<sub>i</sub> using the metabolic inhibitor tissue homogenate (MITH) method. The MITH method was first described and validated by Portner et al. (Portner et al., 1990) and later validated for use at high CO<sub>2</sub> by Baker et al. (2009b). The MITH method utilizes a simple protocol, described here. First, the tissues are quickly excised from the animal, ideally in <2 minutes and placed in aluminum foil or Eppendorf tubes, and immediately placed in liquid nitrogen. Tissues can then be transferred for storage at -80°C for up to three months as validated by Baker et al. (2009b) (see below for more detail). Tissue pH is measured by grinding tissue into a fine powder under liquid nitrogen, which is then transferred to an Eppendorf tube containing metabolic inhibitor (KF [150 mmol/l], Na<sub>2</sub>NTA [6 mmol/l]; exact concentrations of KF and Na<sub>2</sub>NTA may vary depending on intracellular concentration of K and Na) at a ratio of 1:5 – 1:10 tissue:metabolic inhibitor, and gently vortexed. Finally, pH<sub>i</sub> is measured on this supernatant using a pH electrode (Radiometer Analytical SAS pH electrode; CK2401C, Cedex, France) thermostated to the temperature at which the fish had been held.

The MITH method of measuring pH<sub>i</sub> has previously been found to provide accurate, repeatable measurements of pH<sub>i</sub> in several tissues from worms (*Sipunculus nudas*), squid (*Illex illecebrosus*), trout (*Oncorhynchus mykiss*), toads (*Bufo marinus*), and rats (Portner et al., 1990). This method of measuring pH<sub>i</sub> was found to provide comparable pH<sub>i</sub> values, with less variability compared to the older and commonly used dimethyloxazolidinedione (DMO) technique which is more variable and has considerable time delay to reach equilibrium in the tissue. The latter can vary from <30 s to ~ 1 h (Portner et al., 1990) while tissues can be dissected out immediately using the MITH technique. The MITH technique has been used in fish (Baker and Brauner, 2012; Baker et al., 2015; Brauner et al., 2004; Regan et al., 2016) and non-fish (Busk et al., 1997; Galli and Richards, 2012; Portner et al., 1990) studies.

Use of the MITH technique has been validated for both storage duration and measurement of  $pH_i$  from tissues exposed to high CO<sub>2</sub> tensions (Baker et al. 2009b). Baker et al. (2009b) validated the use of the MITH method on sturgeon red blood cell  $pH_i$  measurements following CO<sub>2</sub> exposure of up to 10 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub> with storage in either liquid nitrogen or -80°C for 90 days. They observed no differences in  $pH_i$  of red blood cells measured immediately or following 30 days of storage at -80°C. Additionally, the  $pH_i$  values obtained from the MITH method were identical to those obtained using the freeze-thaw method (Zeidler and Kim, 1977), which involves repetitively freezing and thawing red blood cells and does not use any chemicals.

These storage durations and procedures using the MITH procedure have been used numerous times in fish (Baker and Brauner, 2012; Baker et al., 2015; Brauner et al., 2004; Regan et al., 2016) and non-fish studies, including the freshwater turtle (*Trachemys scripta*; (Galli and Richards, 2012), *Rana catesbeiana* tadpoles (Busk et al., 1997), and as indicated above, in worms, squid, toads, and rats (Portner et al., 1990) during CO<sub>2</sub> exposure ranging from normocarbia to 12 kPa *P*CO<sub>2</sub>.